# THE POEMS OF
# SIR THOMAS WIAT

## IN EFFIGIEM THOMAE VIATI.

Holbenus nitida pingendi maximus arte
Effigiem expressit graphicè: sed nullus Apelles
Exprimet ingenium felix animumque Viati.

T. 

V.

Aetas Viati.

Syderei peteret cum cœli regna Viatus
Tempora lustrorū non dum compleuerat octo.

# THE POEMS OF SIR THOMAS WIAT

EDITED

FROM THE MSS. AND EARLY EDITIONS

BY

A. K. FOXWELL, M.A. (Lond.)
*Lecturer in English,*
*Late Lecturer and Tutor at the Ladies' College, Cheltenham*

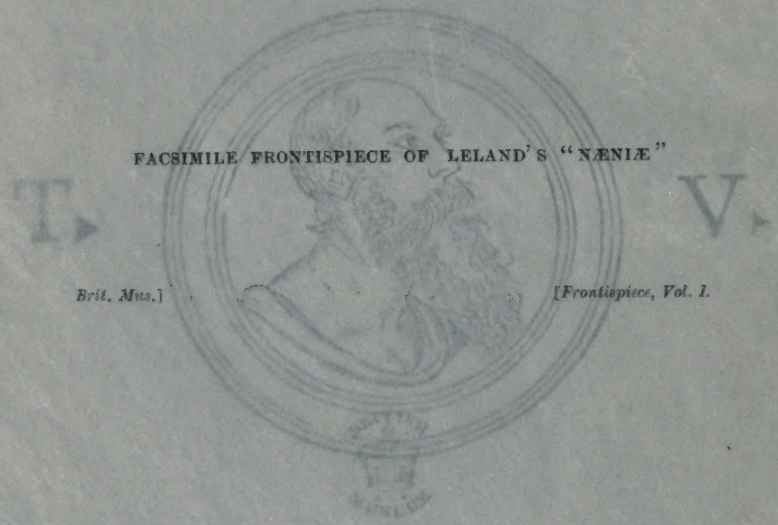
VOL. I.

PREFACE AND TEXT



London: University of London Press
PUBLISHED FOR THE UNIVERSITY OF LONDON PRESS, LTD.
BY HODDER AND STOUGHTON, WARWICK SQUARE, E.C.
1913

FACSIMILE FRONTISPIECE OF LELAND'S "NÆNIÆ"



*Brit. Mus.*] [*Frontispiece, Vol. I.*

# THE POEMS OF SIR THOMAS WIAT

EDITED

FROM THE MSS. AND EARLY EDITIONS

BY

A. K. FOXWELL, M.A. (Lond.)

*Lecturer in English,*

*Late Lecturer and Tutor at the Ladies' College, Cheltenham*

VOL. I

PREFACE AND TEXT



London: University of London Press

PUBLISHED FOR THE UNIVERSITY OF LONDON PRESS, LTD.
BY HODDER AND STOUGHTON, WARWICK SQUARE, E.C.

1913

# PREFACE

THE aim of this edition is twofold: first, to provide an authoritative text of the poetical works of Sir Thomas Wiat; and, secondly, to vindicate his important position in respect of his achievements in verse, his connection with contemporary continental thought and poetical aspirations, and the wide influence he exerted upon the poets of his day—an influence which extended into the Elizabethan age.

The obscurity under which much of Wiat's achievement has remained for over three and a half centuries is mainly due to the coupling of his name with that of the Earl of Surrey, a poet who was not only his junior by a generation (as time was then reckoned), but who only began to write, as an ardent admirer and disciple of Wiat, when his master had reached maturity.

Contemporary critics placed Surrey first, in deference to his rank; later ages looked upon him as the superior poet. The Scotch reviewers, criticizing Nott's edition of Wiat, 1815–6, went so far as to declare that Wiat was a diplomatist and a man of wit, but no poet. The criticism of the last fifty

years has been steadily increasing in the appreciation of Wiat, but his true position, in connection with contemporary thought, his aim and principles in versification, still remains to be set forth.

G. F. Nott aimed at producing the works of Wiat from the MSS. He succeeded in gathering together a mass of interesting material in connection with the poems and their Italian sources, but he failed to provide an authoritative text, because on many important points he followed Tottel instead of Wiat's own text. Moreover, he presented the poems in nineteenth-century English. This was no doubt due to the popular prejudice of his day, but it was fatal to the true presentation of Wiat's poems. Wiat's position in literature in this respect is of peculiar interest. He wrote at a time when spelling and accents were rapidly changing from what one may call "Chaucerian speech" to the Elizabethan English. His earlier poems, to be rightly understood, must be read with the earlier style of pronunciation, namely, with the romance accents. His later poetry conforms to the modern style.

Of still greater importance is the fact that the whole body of his work records that fleeting and lovely efflorescence of our language in the days of the early Tudors, eternally preserved in the versions of the Great Bible, which may be detected in the writers of the Paston Letters, and which was caught and reflected by Wiat in the simple, manly,

picturesque English which he has employed alike for poem, letter or dispatch, a style yet unspoiled by the "heavy ponderosity" of Latinized English, or the bizarre quips and turns in which the imitators of Guevara and the euphuistic writers delighted. To modernize Wiat was to take away the quaint charm that clings to all his work. The poems, presented in the speech of the author, retain their natural cadence, and much of their beauty is preserved by this means.

In regard to the text, the work has been more straightforward than is usually possible in a variorum edition, on account of the possession of the author's own MS. The difficulty, therefore, has been removed of trying to find the best text from a variety of MSS. and early editions, for the authoritative text is known to be E. There were, however, very great difficulties in the way of proving that the E. text should be followed.

The main position was as follows. Tottel, who produced the Miscellany fifteen years after Wiat's death, and ten years after Surrey's, materially altered the poems of both poets. The E. MS. also shows signs of alterations, not in Wiat's hand, particularly in the earlier folios. The question that arose in considering the matter of textual importance was whether the alteration of the E. MS. was begun under Wiat's supervision, and thoroughly carried out for Tottel's Miscellany later; or whether the E. MS.

was an earlier form of the poems, afterwards revised by Wiat in another MS., which Tottel followed. The corrections in the earlier part of the MS. correspond to those in Tottel.

The only possible way of settling such questions was the examination of the whole body of variants. I went to the MSS. in 1906, and compared the variants with those in E., the author's own text; these, again, were compared with Tottel. The results, formulated in my *Study of Sir Thomas Wyatt*, 1910, are briefly as follows—

The E. MS. shows from beginning to end a definite and constant system of versification. Wiat's principles of verse *never change;* they are simply modified as he grows more sure in metre, more mature in thought. For example, the two chief features of his versification, slurring and trisyllabic feet in every part of the verse except the last foot, remains constant; but the habit of employing a trisyllable for the last foot in his earlier verse, evidently imitated from the fifteenth-century Chaucerians, is not found in his later verse.

The variants in Tottel prove that Wiat's individual characteristics were obliterated in his text, particularly in the matter of slurring and of trisyllabic feet.

The A. MS. shows a likeness to Tottel in its variants, especially in the Satires and the Psalms, with errors, and a weakening of the text, which make it inferior in some ways to Tottel. But in the

beginning of this MS. there was clearly an attempt merely to obtain Wiat's poems in groups, following closely the E. MS., for the group of Sonnets in A. is arranged in the order of the E. MS., and the text differs little from E.

It is evident, then, that Tottel and A. adopted a style of verse *contrary to Wiat's method;* but that in the case of the A. MS. the first intention was to copy exactly the poems of Wiat in groups, commencing with the Sonnets which are most numerous in the earlier folios of the E. MS. Later, the poems were copied with the idea of revising them to suit the views of a later generation, and of reducing Wiat's metre to a correct iambic verse. Hence the changes in the Satires and Psalms noticeable in this MS. The D. MS. stands upon its own merits, since it contains a large number of lyrical songs not found elsewhere. Moreover the poems in D. are mainly in octosyllabic verse, whereas the E. MS. chiefly represents Wiat's work in foreign metres, in establishing the five-foot verse.

The other MSS. are mainly interesting as providing MS. authority for Wiat's poems found otherwise in Tottel only. Wiat's MS., then, is incontrovertibly the authoritative text, since, for the main body of the poems, it *alone* preserves the principles of Wiat's versification.

The difficulty of the corrections not in Wiat's hand remains to be removed.

A minute investigation of the MS. has proved that the alterations, both for spelling and difference in phrasing, are alien to Wiat's method. The spelling conforms to Tottel, not to that of the early sixteenth century to which Wiat and the scribes adhere.

A more definite proof of unauthorized corrections is to be seen in the shape of the letters and the handwriting employed, which, in the opinion of experts in the department of the Manuscript Room, British Museum, is not early sixteenth century. Reproductions from the MSS. are to be found in the text.

Another proof for the vindication of the E. MS. as the authority is the fact that Wiat wrote his Psalms (the last complete entry in the MS.) 1540–1541, and the remaining few months of his life were too much occupied with official duties to allow of such a revision of his poems as would *completely alter the system of versification of the E. MS.* to that of Tottel's Miscellany. Finally, the presence of some of Wiat's finest poems in the E. MS., *not published in Tottel's Miscellany*, provides incontrovertible proof that the editor of Tottel had no access to the E. MS.

The version of the E. MS. is followed in this text; all variants are given below the text, as well as unauthorized corrections in the MS. Where Wiat has corrected a poem, the revised version occurs in the text, except in very exceptional instances in the Psalms; in the few cases where

Wiat's original version appears better, the revised version is given in the footnote.

The Introduction and Commentary endeavour to set forth the second aim of this edition, in vindicating Wiat's rightful position and importance in literature.

It remains for me to offer my thanks to the authorities of the Manuscript and Reading Rooms in the British Museum for unfailing courtesy during the seven years' work that this edition has entailed; to the librarian of the Bodleian, Oxford, for the examination of the first edition of Tottel; and to the librarian of Corpus Christi, Cambridge, for copying the Parker MS.

I would also thank Mr. Christie-Miller, of Britwell Court, for allowing me to copy the fragment of the *Courte of Venus* containing several of Wiat's lyrics, in (probably) the earliest printed form, and the librarian of Britwell Court for kindly searching through the early sixteenth-century anthologies of Britwell Library, amongst which is a unique copy of Surrey's Elegy on Wiat, printed with the same title-page as found in Leland's "Næniæ."

To Sir Martin Conway I tender my grateful appreciation for an afternoon pleasantly spent with him in going over Wiat's ancestral home, Allington Castle, now in his possession; and to all friends who have helped in many ways, in the kindly intellectual sympathy without which a work such as this could not be carried through, amongst whom I would name

my old master, Professor W. P. Ker, for continual encouragement and for looking over proofs; Mr. Arundell Esdaile, for much generous help in a subject in which he is greatly interested, and in particular for his notes on the Epigram "For shamefast harm," for introductions to the librarian of Britwell Court, and to the Record Office; Dr. R. W. Chambers for suggesting an illustration; Miss Tuke, for pleasant Saturday mornings spent in reading Petrarch; another old friend, the Provost of University College, who in a busy life has never grudged friendly criticism; Professor L. M. Brandin for introductions to the Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris, for the rare sixteenth-century editions of Maurice Sève's "Microcosme"; and Professor J. Hoops, of Heidelberg University for valuable comment, and corroboration of some points newly set forth in this edition.

In conclusion, every effort has been made to secure accuracy in the text and variants, by a constant revision and checking of MSS. for the last three years; and to gauge Wiat's true position as a poet by a survey of early sixteenth-century literature in France, Italy, and Spain. The faults are my own; the merits are due to the generous help accorded me.

A. K. Foxwell.

*British Museum,*
*October 1913.*

## *SUMMARY OF CHIEF EVENTS OF WIAT'S LIFE.**

[Bracketed events are probable, but documentary evidence is lacking.]

| | | Summary of Chief Events in Wiat's Life. | Events affecting Wiat's Life and Works. |
|---|---|---|---|
| | | Sir Henry Wiat, supporter of Henry Tudor, suffered imprisonment and torture under Richard III; rewarded on Henry VII's accession by the estate of Allington Castle, on R. Medway, Kent, and made confidential adviser to the King. Married Jane Skinner. | *Note.—Date of Works refer to publication.* 1511. Erasmus Lectures unofficially in Greek at Cambridge. |
| | 1503 . . | Thomas Wiat (the elder) born at Allington Castle. | |
| College . | 1516 . . | Thomas Wiat at Court as Ewer-extraordinary at the christening of Princess Mary. | 1516. Serafino's Works published at Florence. |
| | ,, . . | T. Wiat entered at St. John's College, Cambridge (opened 1516, with Allan Percy as head). | |
| | 1517–18 . . | T. Wiat took his degree at St. John's, Cambridge, as "determinatore in Arte." | *1518.* Richard Croke the first professor of the Greek chair at Cambridge. |
| | 1519–20 . . | T. Wiat took his degree as M.A. | 1518. *Il Cortegiano* by Baldassarre Castiglione in manuscript; the copying of the MS. by the Lady Vittoria Colonna led to the edition in 1528. |
| | 1520 . . | T. Wiat married Elizabeth, d. of Lord Cobham. | |
| | 1521 . . | T. Wiat's son (T. Wiat the younger) born. | |
| At Court . | 1523 . . | T. Wiat engaged to carry money to the North. | |
| ,, . | 1524 . . | T. Wiat clerk of the King's jewels. Office held until 1530. | 1524. Sir Henry Wiat Treasurer of the Chamber. |
| ,, . | 1525 . . | T. Wiat took part in a feat at arms "on the Feaste of Xmas." Arrived at Bordeaux April 1. | |
| France † . | March 1526 . | T. Wiat followed Sir Thomas Cheney's embassy to France. Carried dispatches to King Henry (May 14), and returned to Cheney May 21. Cheney left May 29. | 1526. Publication of Pynson's edition of Chaucer. The Divorce Suit, 1526–33. Sack of Rome, May 1527. |
| Italy . | 1527 (Feb.–May in Rome) | T. Wiat started January 7 viâ Paris and Lyons. Accompanied Sir John Russell to Italy on a mission to the Pope at Rome February 6, and to the Council at Venice. | |

* These events are collected *in their entirety* for the first time from State Papers and other sources.

† 1526.—Left England in March. Bordeaux, April 7. Cognac, May 1. *Sir Th. Cheyne wrote to Henry VIII:* "We sent Wyatt with this because the affair is important and requires great haste, as you will see by the Cardinal's letter. He can show you the contenance of the noble men toward us. He has been with us at the Court, and can show your Grace a part of the comodities belonging to this town." Cognyac, May 1.

*And to Wolsey:* "He hath been at the Court with us from time to (time), and, as we think, hath as much wit to mark and remember everything he saith as any young man hath in England." Cognac, 1 May. Wiat returned to Cognac by May 21.

Cheyne to (Henry VIII): "Went yesterday, Whitsunday, to the French king . . . We told him that the gentleman had returned who had been despatched to England: he said 'he would be joyous to hear from your Highness, his most dear and loving brother.' Presented Wyatt, who with good and discreet behaviour 'declared the same accordingly.'" Cognac, May 21.

May 27. Tayler to Wolsey: "Cheyne has been recalled. Will find great lack of him as he *spoke French expeditely.*" This probably was the reason of Wiat's inclusion in the party.

## *SUMMARY OF CHIEF EVENTS OF WIAT'S LIFE.*

| | | Summary of Chief Events in Wiat's Life. | Events affecting Wiat's Life and Works. |
|---|---|---|---|
| Italy . | 1527 . . | T. Wiat visited Ferrara, Bologna, Florence, and Venice; was taken prisoner by the Spaniards and escaped. | |
| Calais . | 1528 . . | T. Wiat appointed Marshal of Calais. Held office till 1532. | 1528. First edition of *Il Cortegiano.* |
| ,, . | 1529 . . | T. Wiat receives permission to export wine and wood from Calais. | 1529. Publication of G. G. Trissino's *Poetica* with his translation of Dante's treatise. |
| ,, . | 1530 . . | T. Wiat appointed High Marshal of Calais; returned to England 1532. | 1530. Alamanni at the Court of France. |
| ,, . | 1532 . . | T. Wiat appointed Commissioner of the Peace for Essex. | 1531. Sannazaro's poems published. |
| England . | [1532] . . | T. Wiat probably of the King's retinue on his visit to Calais, October 1532. | 1532. Alamanni's poems (dedicated to Francis I). 1532. Chaucer, ed. Thynne, published. |
| At Court . | May 1533 . | T. Wiat Chief Ewer in place of his father at the Coronation of Anne Boleyn. | |
| ,, . | June 1533 . | T. Wiat licensed to have twenty men in livery, and to have command over the men of Kent "able for war." | |
| ,, . | May 1534 . | T. Wiat imprisoned in the Fleet for joining in an affray in London. | |
| ,, . | Feb. 1535 . | T. Wiat made High Steward of the Manor (or Abbey) of W. Malling, granted by Eliz. Rede, Abbess. | |
| ,, . | July 1535 . | T. Wiat received grant of the lease of Aryngdon Park, Yorks. | |
| ,, . | March 1536 . | T. Wiat dubbed knight on Easter Day. | 1536. Thomas Linacre's Commentary on Ptolemy's Spheres [many other editions]. |
| ,, . | May 1536 . | T. Wiat imprisoned owing to a quarrel with the Duke of Suffolk at the time of the Boleyn downfall. | 1536. Publication of the "Compost," Englished from the French version of Ptolemy's Astronomy. |
| Kent . | June 1536 . | T. Wiat released and sent to Allington Castle to "amend his conduct" under his father's supervision. | |
| | Sept. 1536 . | Sir T. Wiat received the Stewardship of Conysboro' Castle. | 1536. Publication of Aretino's Penitential Psalms. (2nd edition, 1539; 3rd edition, 1540.) |
| | Oct. 1536 . | Sir T. Wiat ordered to raise men of Kent for service in the North (350 men supplied). | 1536–39. Height of literary activity at Lyons. Literary discussion concerning Platonic Love *v.* Passion. |
| | 1536–37 . . | Sir T. Wiat sheriff for Kent. | |
| Spain . | March 1537 . | Sir T. Wiat appointed ambassador in Spain; made member of the Privy Council. | |
| | April 1537 . | Sir T. Wiat leaves for Spain. | |
| | May 1537 . | Sir T. Wiat passes through Lyons. | |
| | June 1537 . | Sir T. Wiat at Mountzon, beside Barbustra (Huesca Province). | |
| | Oct. 1537 . | Sir T. Wiat with Sir John Dudley appointed to acquaint Emperor with the news of the heir to England. | Oct. 1537. Birth of Prince Edward. |
| | Nov. 1537 . | Sir T. Wiat's father died, leaving his son a rich landowner. | |

# SUMMARY OF CHIEF EVENTS OF WIAT'S LIFE.

| | Summary of Chief Events in Wiat's Life. | Events affecting Wiat's Life and Works. |
|---|---|---|
| May 1538 . | Sir T. Wiat returns to England with "good proposals" from the Emperor to Henry VIII. | *May 1538.* The Catholic-Spanish alliance between Charles V, the Pope and Francis I. |
| July 1538 . | Sir T. Wiat before Marseilles to meet the Emperor. | 1538. Bonner's accusation of Wiat (quenched by Cromwell). |
| May 1539 . | Sir T. Wiat returns to England. | |
| June 1539 . | Sir T. Wiat's reckoning of moneys for Ports and diet during his years of office in Spain. | |
| June–Nov. [1539] | Sir T. Wiat's life at Allington, putting the estates in order bequeathed by his father. | |
| Nov. 1539 . | Sir T. Wiat appointed extraordinary ambassador to follow Charles V to Flanders. | |
| Dec. 1539 . | Sir T. Wiat at Blois, the French Court. | |
| Jan. 1540 . | Sir T. Wiat in Flanders with the Emperor. | Dec. 1540. C. Marot presents his paraphrase of the Psalms to the Emperor. |
| May 1540 . | Sir T. Wiat returns to England. Rewarded with Boxley Abbey in Kent, and the Priory of Crutched Friars, London. | June 1540. Cromwell seized.<br>July 1540. Cromwell executed. |
| July 1540–Dec. 1541. | Sir T. Wiat in Kent in retirement. [Writes his Penitential Psalms.] | Jan. 1541. Mason (Wiat's secretary in Spain) imprisoned. |
| Jan. 1541 . | Sir T. Wiat residing in his home of the Crutched Friars, London. | |
| Jan. 17, 1541 . | Sir T. Wiat seized and imprisoned, all goods confiscated, and his estate at Allington seized, and possession taken. | Mar. 1541. Mason released and pardoned.<br>1541. Great naval preparations and ships built. |
| Mar. 21, 1541 . | Sir T. Wyat released with full unconditional pardon. | |
| April 1541 . | Sir T. Wiat sent to Calais in command of 300 horse to watch the defences of Calais. | |
| Nov.–Dec. 1541 | Sir T. Wiat returned as M.P. for Kent. | |
| Jan. 1542 . | Sir T. Wiat in Parliament. | |
| August 1542 . | Sir T. Wiat designed as Commander of the Fleet. | |
| Oct. 3, 1542 . | Sir T. Wiat and Tate conduct Irish leaders to do duty to Prince Edward. The same day the Spanish ambassador landed at Falmouth, and Sir Thomas Wiat sent to meet him with as much haste as possible. | |
| Oct. 1542 . | Sir T. Wiat fell ill on his way to Falmouth, and died at Sherbourne, Dorset. | *c.* 1542. Publication of the *Courte of Venus*, containing a selection of Wiat's lyrics.<br>Wiat's MS. came into the hands of Sir John Harington. |
| ,, ,, . | Sir T. Wiat buried in the Great Church, Sherbourne. | *1549.* The edition of Sir T. Wiat's Penitential Psalms by Harington and Raynauld.<br>1557. Publication of a Selection of Poems in Tottel's *Miscellany*. |

# CONTENTS

## RONDEAUS, *circ.* 1528–1529



## SONNETS, *circ.* 1528–1541

# CONTENTS



## EPIGRAMS, *circ.* 1532–1541



*Note.*—In order to complete the group of Sonnets and Epigrams, those found only in D, A, P, H, and T. are added here.

# CONTENTS

## MISCELLANEOUS POEMS, 1528–1536[1]



## THE SATIRES, 1536–1537



[1] The first seven of these poems come among the Sonnets composed at Calais 1528–32.

[2] The poem beginning "Madame withouten" is very probably a Court poem, and begins the section of poems in the MS. which covers the years at Court 1533–1536.

# CONTENTS

## POEMS WRITTEN AFTER 1536



## THE PSALMS

# CONTENTS

## POEMS PECULIAR TO THE DEVONSHIRE MS.

### PART I



### PART II



* Printed for the first time from the MS.

# CONTENTS



## POEMS ABSENT FROM THE E. AND D. MSS.



## FROM TOTTEL'S "SONGES AND SONETTES"



* Printed for the first time from the MS.

# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

## MS. SIGLA

| | | | |
|---|---|---|---|
| **E.** | Egerton MS. | 2711. | British Museum. |
| **D.** | Additional MS. | 17492. | ,, ,, |
| **A.** | ,, ,, | 28635. | ,, ,, |
| **P.** | ,, ,, | 36529. | ,, ,, |
| **Harl.** | Harleian MS. | 78. | |
| | Transcript of E. Additional MS. | 28636. | ,, ,, |
| | Song-Book of Henry VIII Additional MS. | 31922 | Containing Musical Settings to Sixteenth-Century Lyrics |
| | Royal Appendix, No. | 58. | |

## EDITIONS CITED IN NOTES

**PC.** Printed Copy of Psalms 1549 Edition.

**PS.** Percy and Stevens's Projected Edition of the Miscellany, with Additional Poems (1807).

**Nott.** G. F. Nott's Edition of Surrey and Wiat, 1815–6.

**T.** The First Edition of Tottel's Miscellany, June 1557, and the Second Edition July 1557, are cited in this text as T. when they agree, as $T_1$. and $T_2$. when they differ.

## RONDEAU I

Behold love, thy power how she dispiseth :
My great payne, how litle she regardeth :
The holy oth, whereof she taketh no cure
Broken she hath : and yet she bideth sure
Right at her ease, and litle she dredeth. 5

Wepened thou art, and she unarmed sitteth :
To the disdaynfull her liff she ledeth :
To me spitefull withoute cause or mesur. 8
Behold love.

I ame in hold : if pitie the meveth,
Goo bend thy bowe, that stony hertes breketh,
And with some stroke revenge the displeasur
Of the and him, that sorrowe doeth endur,
And as his lorde the lowly entreateth. 13
Behold love.

(Signed in margin "Tho.")

*Alteration of the MS.*

See reproduction of the MS., p. 2.

Initial capitals originally inserted at ll. 1, 6, 9. Later alteration of initial capitals to every line. Initial capitals are substituted throughout this text in accordance with general rule of printing in 16th century.

The first few pages of the MS. contain many later corrections, discernible by the difference in the ink, and the alteration in the shape of the letters.

1 **Behold love]** *Beholde loove* (*loove* written above original *love*). Wiat and the scribes never write *u* for *v*, except occasionally after such symbols as *f*ᵛ signifying *ser*, as *f*ᵛ*ue* for *serve*, *pref*ᵛ*ue* for *preserve*. This abbreviation is represented by one symbol in the MS., the above is the nearest means of expressing it in print. See Wiat's autograph letter, p. 135, l. 5, third word *s*ᵉʳ*vant*, and l. 6, second word *s*ᵉʳ*vice*. In each case Wiat uses *v* after the symbol, though the E. MS. contains examples of *u* after the abbreviation.

Similar alterations in the spelling of *love* occur in the refrains after ll. 8, 13.

**she]** a second *e* has been added later, also in ll. 2, 4, 5, 6, 7, but note that original spelling has been retained in l. 3. Cf. reproduction of MS., p. 2.

3 **taketh**] alt. to *takes*.

5 *thee* inserted after *litle*. This correction changes the idea in the Italian of the lady's equal unconcern for love personified and the lover. It may be noted that in the original reading, as in text, the ending *-eth* is the hendecasyllable in ll. 1, 2, and 6, 7, but at l. 5, the end of the first part, and at l. 8, the end of the second part, the poet reverts to a decasyllabic ending. The third part of the poem, ll. 8–13, is hurried in movement to express the indignation of the lover, and consists of decasyllables, thus "marrying sound to sense."

7 **To**] a second *o* added, as also l. 8.

**the**] a second *e* is added, as also ll. 9, 13; *all* inserted before *her*; final *e* added to *liff*.

8 **mesur**] final *e* added.

9 **I ame in hold**] *e* erased in *ame*, and final *e* added to *hold*.

10 **goo**] the second *o* crossed out.

12 **thee**] MS. *yee*.

**endur**] final *e* added.

13 **lowly**] alt. to *lowely*, and *her* inserted before *entreateth*.

**entreateth**] Written in MSS. E, D. *entreath*; evidently as a shortened form. The ordinary form *entreateth* is given to avoid unnecessary obscurity. A later correction adds *her entreateth*. All these corrections are *not* in an early 16th-century hand. It is impossible to say whether the hand is that of John Harington's (mid 16th century) or a modern hand, but the corrections of this poem appear in Tottel's version (see below).

*Variants in MSS. and Tottel.*

2 **great payne**] D. *grete greef*. T. *grevous payne*.

3 **the holy**] D. *thy holly*. T. *the solemn*.

**taketh**] T. *takes*. D. *takis*.

5 **she dredeth**] T. *thee she dredeth*. D. adds refrain after l. 5, *Beholde love*.

6 **Wepened . . . sitteth**] D, T. *Thou hast weapon unarmid she sitteth*.

7 **her liff**] T, *all her life*.

8 **spitefull**] D. *dispitefull*.

**cause**] T. *just cause*.

Refrain: **Behold love**] T. *Behold Love how proudly she triumpheth*.

9 **if . . . meveth**] T. *but if thee pitie meveth*.

10 **hertes**] MS. *herte*, with a flourish after final *e*, which often signifies the plural; cf. Wiat's letter for examples. D, T. *hartes*.

13 **entreateth**] D. *entreath*. T. *her entreateth*.

Refrain] T. omits, cf. Nos. 2, 7. In these three cases Tottel has converted Wiat's rondeau into sonnet form.

FACSIMILE OF FIRST POEM IN E. MS.

*Brit. Mus., Egerton 2711*

[*To face p. 2, Vol. I.*

Zouche,

Scholde, lobe, thy power holde she despiseth:
My great pawne holde litle she regardeth.
The holynesse, wherof she takes no cure:
broken shee hath: and yet, shee bideth sure,
Right as her ease: litle shee dredeth.
Thyo
Wepend thyn art: and shee dnarmed sitteth:
For shee disdayn full, all her lesse shee lodeth:
Too, met spite full, vnd onke rauke, or measure.

Zouche:

Scholde lobe:

Ayn in holde: if pitie thee medeth:
Goy, bend thy bowe: that stoun hath bredeth:
And, with some stroke, redange the displesun
Off vs, to him: that sorrowe doth endure:
And, as he lorde, (thee lowlyn, hew, entreatth) entreated

Zouche.

## RONDEAU 2

What vaileth trouth? or by it to take payn?
To stryve, by stedfastnes, for to be tayne?
To be juste and true; and fle from doublenes?
Sythens all alike, where ruleth craftines,
Rewarded is boeth fals, and plain. 5

Sonest he spedeth, that moost can fain:
True meaning heart is had in disdayn:
Against deceipte and doublenes 8
What vaileth trouth?

Deceved is he, by crafty trayn,
That meaneth no gile: and doeth remayn
Within the trapp, withoute redresse:
But, for to love, lo, such à maistres,
Whose crueltie nothing can refrayn, 13
What vaileth trouth?

(Signed in margin "Tho.")

*Spelling Alterations of the MS.*

1 **trouth**] alt. to *troth.*
**to take payn**] alt. to *too take payne.*
2 **To**] alt. to *too.*
**for to be tayne**] alt. to *for too attayne.*
3 **to be juste . . . fle**] alt. to *Too bee just . . . flee.*
5 **boeth**] alt. to *bothe.*
**plain**] final *e* added.
6 **Sonest . . . moost can fain**] alt. to *soonest hee spedez that moste can faine*; (2) *fayne.*
9 **Deceved is he**] alt. to *deceyude iz hee.*
10 **meaneth**] alt. to *meanez.*

*Variants in MSS. and Tottel.*

2 **for to be tayne**] T. *for to attayne.*
3 **To be juste and true**] T. *How to be just.*

5 **boeth fals**] T. *both crafty fals.*
6 **can fain**] T. *lye and fayn.*
7 **in disdayn**] T. *in high disdain.*
8 **and doublenes**] T. *and cloked doublenesse.*
Refrain : **What vaileth trouth**] T. *What vaileth troth or parfit stedfastnes.*
9 **by crafty**] T. *false and crafty trayn.*
10 **and doeth**] T. *and faithfull doth.*
11 **withoute redresse**] T. *withoute help or redresse.*
12 **à maistres**] T. *a stern maistresse.*
13 **Whose . . . refrayn**] T. *where crueltie dwelles alas it were in vain.*
Refrain] T. omits. Cf. Nos. 1 and 7.

## RONDEAU 3

For to love her for her lokes lovely
My hert was set in thought right fermely,
Trusting by trouth to have had redresse:
But she hath made anothr promes,
And hath geven me leve full honestly, 5

Yet do I not reioyse it greately:
For on my faith I loved to surely:
But reason will that I do cesse 8
For to love her.

Syns that in love the paynes ben dedly,
Me thincke it best that reddely
I do retorn to my first adresse;
For at this tyme to great is the prese
And perilles appere to abundauntely 13
For to love her.

(Signed in margin "Wyat.")

1 **lokes**] MS. *loke*, with curved sign after the *e*, which often signifies *s*. Cf. Wiat's letter.

3 **trouth**] MS. spelling *trought*—possibly through spelling of *thought* in line above. The usual spelling of the MS. is *trouth*.

6 **reioyce**] D. *refuse*.

8 **cesse**] MS. spelling *sesse*. D. *loose*.

9 **dedly**] D. *deddelye*.

10 **thincke**] D. *thinkes*.

**reddely**] *e* overwritten first *e* by later hand.

## RONDEAU 4

Helpe me to seke for I lost it ther,
And if that ye have founde it ye that be here,
And seke to convaye it secretely,
Handell it softe, and trete it tenderly:
Or els it will plain and then appere; 5

But rather restore it mannerly,
Syns that I do aske it thus honestly;
For to lese it, it sitteth me to neere; 8
Helpe me to seke.

Alas and is there no remedy?
But have I thus lost it wilfully?
I wis it was a thing all to dere
To be bestowed, and wist not where:
It was myn hert, I pray you hertely 13
Helpe me to seke.

(Signed in margin "Wyat.")

Absent from T. and the other MSS.

## RONDEAU 5

Yf it be so that I forsake the,
As banysshed from thy company,
Yet my hert, my mynde, and my affection,
Shall still remain in thy perfection,
But right as thou lyst so order me. 5

But som would saye, in their opinion
Revoultid is thy good intention;
Then may I well blame thy cruelte 8
Yf it be so.

But my self, I say on this fasshion:
I have her hert in my possession,
And of itself there cannot perdy
By no meanes love an herteles body,
And on my faith good is the reason 13
If it be so.

(Signed in margin "Wyat.")

Absent from the other MSS. and from Tottel.

7 **Revoultid**] alt. by Wiat from *revoulsed*. The last three letters, *tid*, correspond to the handwriting in the Psalms.

## RONDEAU 6

Thou hast no faith of him that hath none,
But thou must love him nedes by reason,
For as saieth a proverbe notable,
" Eche thing seketh his semblable "
And thou hast thyn of thy condition. 5

Yet is it not the thing I passe on,
Nor hote nor cold is myn affection,
For syns thyn hert is so mutable, 8
Thou hast no faith.

I thought the true withoute exception,
But I perceve I lacked discretion
To fasshion faith to wordes mutable;
Thy thought is to light and variable
To chaunge so oft withoute occasion, 13
Thou hast no faith.

(Signed "Tho.")

*Alteration of the MS.*

7 **is**] MS. *of* (evidently scribal error) corrected to *is* later hand.

*Variants in MSS. and in Tottel.*

The D. version has an extra syllable in every line to make the metre decasyllabic.

1 **hath none**] D. *eke hath none.*
2 **by reason**] D. *by good reason.*
3 **notable**] D. *right notable.*
4 **Eche thing**] D. *Everye thing.*
5 **thy condition**] D. *thy owne condition.*
6 **passe on**] D. *passe uppon.*
7 **Nor hote**] D. *nothr hote.*
8 **is so**] D. *is thus so.*
9 **I thought** ] D. *I demed.*
11 **mutable**] D. *so dobable.*

## RONDEAU 7

Goo burnyng sighes! unto the frosen hert
Goo, breke the ise whiche pites paynfull dert
Myght never perse, and if mortall prayer
In hevyn may be herd; at lest I desir
That deth or mercy be ende of my smert. 5

Take with the payne whereof I have my part;
And eke the flame from which I cannot stert:
And leve me then in rest I you require. 8
Goo, burning sighes!

I must goo worke I se by craft and art,
For trueth and faith in her is laide apart;
Alas I cannot therefor assaill her
With pitefull plaint and scalding fyer
That oute of my brest doeth straynably stert 13
Goo, burning sighes!

(Signed "Wyat.")

*Variants in MSS. and Tottel.*

2 **whiche**] alt. from *with*. D. *with piteus paynful dart*. *with* is an evident error, making the line ungrammatical.

3 **and if mortall**] MS. *mortall*, the final *l* with upward loop stands for abbreviated *s* or *es* at times, it is also used as a mere flourish. T. *and if that mortall*.

4 **In hevyn . . . desir**] T. *In hevyn be herd at lest yet I desir*.

5 **be ende of my smert**] T. *end my wofull smert*.

6 **with the**] D. *with you*. Throughout the MS. *the* is the spelling for pronoun *thee*.

Refrain: **Goo, burning sighes**] T. *Go burning sighes fulfil that I desire*, cf. Rondeaus 1, 2.

12 **plaint**] T. *complaint*.

13 **That oute . . . stert**] T. *That from my brest disceavably doth start*.

Refrain] T. omits.

## RONDEAU 8

Ye old mule that think your self so fayre,
Leve off with craft your beautie to repaire,
For it is time withoute any fable;
No man setteth now by riding in your saddell;
To muche travaill so do your train apaise, 5
Ye old mule!

With fals favoure though you deceve thayes,
Who so taste you shall well perceve your layes
Savoureth som what of a kappurs stable, 8
Ye old mule!

Ye must now serve to market and to faire,
All for the burden, for pannyers a paire;
For syns gray heres ben powdered in your sable,
The thing ye seke for you must yourself enable
To pourchase it by payement and by prayer, 13
Ye old mule!

Absent from T. and the other MSS.

## RONDEAU 9

What no perdy ye may be sure!
Thinck not to make me to your lure,
With wordes and chere so contrarieng,
Swete and sowre contrewaing;
To much it were still to endure; 5
Trouth is tryed where craft is in ure;
But though ye have hade my hertes cure
Trow ye I dote withoute ending? 8
What no perdy!

Though that with pain I do procure
For to forgett that ons was pure,
Within my hert shall still that thing
Unstable, unsure, and wavering
Be in my mynde withoute recure? 13
What no perdy!

(Signed "Tho.")

Not in Tottel.
6 **Trouth is tryed**] D. *Trothe is trayde.*
7 **hade**] final *e* erased in MS.
11 **my hert**] D. *my* (followed by a diagram of a heart).
The last refrain omitted by the original scribe and added later. The same hand appears in the correction of the epigram "Alas, Madam" (f. 71, E.).
Signed at the foot of D f. 19a, "fynys q^d Wyatt."

# SONNETS

## I

Cesar, when that the traytor of Egipt,
With thonorable hed did him present,
  Covering his gladnes, did represent
  Playnt with his teres owteward, as it is writt; 4
And Hannyball, eke, when fortune him shitt
  Clene from his reign, and from all his intent
  Laught to his folke, whom sorrowe did torment,
  His cruel dispite for to dis-gorge and qwit. 8
So chaunceth it oft, that every passion
  The mind hideth, by color contrary,
  With fayned visage, now sad, now mery: 11
Whereby if I laught, any tyme or season,
  It is: for bicause I have nother way
  To cloke my care, but under sport and play. 14

1 **Cesar**] alt. to *Caesar* later hand. The original letters are blotted out, but see spelling in Sonnet 3, l. 13, *for Cesars I ame.*

**when that**] D. *when.*

3 **Covering his gladnes**] T. *coveryng his hartes gladnesse.*

5 **And Hannyball, eke . . . shitt**] MS. spelling of *eke* alt. to *eek* (later hand). D. *And . . . fortune ded flitt.* T. *Eke Hannibal when fortune him outshyt.*

6 **Clene . . . intent**] D. *From him, and to Rome ded for whele relente. Clene,* MS. spelling alt. to *cleene.*

7 **Laught . . . torment**] D. *Ded laugh among them whan tearis had besprent.*

8 **His cruel . . . qwit**] D. *Her cruell dispight inwardelye to shitt.*

**qwit**] finale added in MS.

9 **So chaunceth it oft**] T. *So chaunceth me.*

10 **color**] alt. to *coolor*, later hand.

12 **Whereby . . . season**] D. *Whereby if I laught at any season.* T. *whereby if that I laugh at any* ($T_1$.) *season, my* ($T_2$.) *season.*

13 **It is for bicause . . . way**] D, T. omit *for.* D. *none othr waye.* T. *none other way. nother waye* is the original MS. reading; with several amendments in later hand: (1) *no* inserted before *nother*; (2) *no other* inserted and *nother* crossed out. This is one of the few words that Wyat shortens; several cases of *tother* occur in the poems; *nother* is more characteristic of the poet than *no other.*

**way**] final *e* added in MS (later).

14 **To**] MS. spelling alt. to *Too.*

**play**] final *e* added.

## 2

The longe love that in my thought doeth harbar :
And in myn hert doeth kepe his residence :
Into my face preseth with bolde pretence :
And therein campeth spreding his baner. 4
She that me lerneth to love and suffre :
And willes that my trust and lustes negligence
Be rayned by reason, shame, and reverence :
With his hardines taketh displeasur. 8
Where with all unto the hertes forrest he fleith :
Leving his enterprise with payn and cry :
And ther him hideth and not appereth. 11
What may I do when my maister fereth?
But in the feld with him to lyve and dye?
For goode is the liff, ending faithfully. 14

1 **doeth harbar**] T. *I harber.*

2 **myn**] A, T. *my.* MS. spelling alt. to *my.*

3 **Into**] a second final *o* added to MS.
**preseth**] MS. spelling alt. to *preaseth.*

4 **therein campeth spreding**] T. *there campeth displaying.*

5 **me lerneth to**] MS. corrected to *mee lernz too.* A. *learns to love and suffer.* T. *learns to love and to suffer.*

6 **willes**] MS. spelling *will*, with upward curve after the final *l*; in many cases in the MS. the curve after *l* has no signification. A. *wills.* T. *willes.*

7 **rayned**] the scansion mark beneath *rayned* is a sign for slurring, and is of great importance, showing that Wyat regarded *-ayn*, *-ain*, as equivalent to two syllables, see Sonnet 6.

8 **taketh**] MS. corrected to *takis* in similar hand; but the *-eth* ending is so characteristic that the original is kept. A, T. *takes.*

9 **Where with . . . fleith**] T. *Wherewith love to the hartes forest be fleeth.* A. *Whear with all unto the hartes. . . .*

10 **payn**] final *e* added in MS.

11 **ther**] final *e* added in MS.

12 **do**] final *o* added in MS.

13 **feld**] final *e* added in MS.
**to lyve and dye**] MS. alt. to *too lyve and dy.*

14 **liff**] final *e* added in MS., later hand. Wiat's spelling *lyff* or *liff.*

Sonnets 2–5 are found in the same order in A. f. 38.

## 3

Who so list to hount : I know where is an hynde,
But, as for me : helas, I may no more.
The vayne travail hath werid me so sore,
I ame of theim, that farthest cometh behinde 4
Yet, may I by no means, my weried mynde
Drawe from the Der; but as she fleeth afore
Faynting I folowe. I leve of therefore :
Sins in a nett I seke to hold the wynde. 8
Who list her hount : I put him oute of dowbte :
As well as I : may spend his tyme in vain.
And graven with Diamonds in letters plain : 11
There is written, her faier neck rounde abowte :
Noli me tangere for Cesars I ame
And wylde for to hold : though I seme tame. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

1 **hount]** *hountt* in MS. with final *t* crossed out, same hand. See spelling *hount* below, l. 9. A later hand has crossed out *o*.

2 **helas]** alt. to *alas* (by scribe); the modern form is usual in the MS.; cf. *alas and is there no remedy*, Rondeau 4. A. *alas*.

4 **farthest cometh]** MS. corrected to *furdest cume*, later hand. A. *that furdest came*.

6 **Der]** letter after D crossed out and indistinguishable.

8 **Sins]** Wiat used this form in the Psalms. Corrected in Wiat's hand from *Sithens*. The corrected form is more usual. A. *sithens*.

9 **her hount]** *o* crossed out in MS. A. *to huntt*.

11 **graven]** A. *grave*.

13 **I ame]** MS. corrected to *am*, later hand.

14 **hold]** final *e* added, later hand.

Notice that the variants in A. correspond with the corrections in the Egerton, which point to a later hand. This is, I think, a proof of corrections other than Wiat's.

## 4

Was I never yet of your love greved,
Nor never shall while that my liff doeth last;
But of hating myself that date is past,
And teeres continuell sore have me weried. 4
I will not yet in my grave be buried;
Nor on my tombe, your name yfixed fast,
As cruell cause that did the sperit son haste
Ffrom thunhappy bonys, by great sighes sterred. 8
Then if an hert of amourous faith and will
May content you, withoute doyng greiff,
Please it you so to this to doo releiff 11
Yf, othr wise, ye seke for to fulfill
Your disdain : ye erre : and shall not as ye wene;
And you yourself the cause thereof hath bene. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

*Alterations in Spelling.*

1 **greved]** alt. to *greeved*, later hand.
8 **bonys]** alt. to *bones*, later hand.
10, 11 **greiff, releiff]** alt. to *greefe, releefe.*
13, 14 **wene, bene]** alt. to *weene, beene.* A. also has *greeved, bones, greef, weene.*

*Variants in MSS. and T.*

1 **yet of your love]** A. *of your love yet.* T. *yet was I never o, your love agreved.*
4 **have]** $T_2$. *hath.*
5 **yet in]** $T_1$. *yet on.* $T_2$. *yet in.*
6 **name yfixed fast]** T. *name have fixed fast.*
7 **the sperit soon]** MS. spelling *son.* T. *my sprite sone.*
8 **bonys]** T. *boones.*
9 **amourous]** first *u* crossed out later.
10 **May content you withoute]** T. *content your minde withouten.*
12 **ye]** T. *you.*
13 **Your disdain : ye erre . . . ye wene]** MS. spelling alt. to *weene* (later hand). T. *your wrath : you erre . . . you wene.*
14 **And you . . . bene]** *bene* alt. to *beene* (later hand).

## 5

Eche man me telleth I chaunge moost my devise :
And on my faith, me thinck it goode reason,
To chaunge propose like after the season;
Ffor in every cas, to kepe still oon gyse 4
Ys mytt for theim that would be taken wyse;
And I ame not of suche maner condition :
But treted after a dyvers fasshion :
And thereupon my dyvernes doeth rise. 8
But you that blame this dyvernes moost,
Chaunge you no more, but still after oon rate,
Trete ye me well, and kepe ye in the same state 11
And while with me doeth dwell this weried goost,
My word nor I shall not be variable,
But alwaies oon your owne both ferme and stable. 14

(Signed "Tho.")

No alterations of the MS.

1 **Eche man me telleth**] D. *Eche man tells me I chaunge of my devise.* T. *Eche man me telth I change most my devise.* A. *Eche man . . . must my devyse.*

3 **propose**] A, T. *purpose.*
**like after the season**] D. *even after the season.*

4 **every cas**] T. *ech case.*

7 **after a**] D. *after, aftr a.*

9 **But you that blame . . . moost**] T. *but you this diversnesse that blamen most.*

11 **Trete ye . . . kepe ye . . . state**] T. *trete you . . . kepe you in that state.* D. omits *in.*

13 **shall not be**] D. *shall never be.*

14 **oon your owne**] D. *as your owne.*

## 6

If amours faith, an hert unfayned,
A swete languor a great lovely desir:
If honest will kyndelled in gentill fier:
If long error in a blynde maze chayned: 4
If in my visage, eche thought depaynted:
Or els in my sperklyng voyse lower or higher,
Which nowe fere, nowe shame, wofully doth tyer:
If a pale colour which love hath stayned: 8
If to have an other then myself more dere:
Yf wailing and sighting continuelly,
With sorrowfull anger feding bissely: 11
Yf burning a farr of: and fresing nere
Ar cause that by love my self I destroye,
Yours is the fault and myn the great annoye. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

1 **If amours faith, an hert**] A. *If amorous faithe.* T. *If amourous fayth or if an hert.*

4 **blynde maze**] T. *blind mase.*

5 **thought depaynted**] T. *thought distayned.*

6 **Or els in my**] T. *Or if my.*

7 **Which nowe . . . wofully**] T. *Which fear and shame so wofully.*

8 **If a pale . . . stayned**] T. *If pale . . . love alas hath stayned.*

10 **Yf wailing and sighting**] T, A. *If wailyng or sighing.*

12 **a farr of**] MS. spelling *of* for *off*. A. *a fall of*, evidently scribal error.

13 **Ar cause . . . destroye**] MS. reads *or*. A. *or;* but sense requires *are*; original Italian is *Son le cagion Ch'amando i' mi distempre*, Pet. Son. ccxxiv. Ed. Florence, 1904. T. *Are cause that by love my selfe I stroy*. $T_2$. and later editions, *Are cause I that by love my selfe destroy.*

14 **fault**] Wiat's spelling for this word is *fawte.*

In the A. MS. the Epigram *Alas Madame*, and the Satire *Mine Owne J.P.* are inserted between the preceding Sonnet and this; the rest of the group follows the order of the E. MS.

## 7

Ffarewell Love and all thy lawes for ever,
Thy bayted hookes shall tangill me no more :
Senec and Plato call me from thy lore,
To perfaict welth my wit for to endevèr. 4
In blynde error when I did persevèr;
Thy sherpe repulse, that pricketh ay so sore,
Hath taught me to sett in tryfels no store :
And scape fourth, syns libertie is levèr. 8
Therefor farewell, goo trouble younger hertes :
And in me clayme no more authoritie;
With idill yeuth goo use thy propertie; 11
And thereon spend thy many brittill dertes.
For hitherto though I have lost all my tyme,
Me lusteth no lenger rotten boughes to clyme. 14

(Signed "Tho.")

1 **Ffarewell**] D. *Now farewell love and thy lawes.*
2 **hookes**] D. *hokis.*
3 **Senec and Plato call me**] D. *To(o) sore a hope hath called me.*
4 **To perfaict welth . . . endevèr**] D. *To surer welth my wittes to endevor.*
5 **when**] D. *when last.*
6 **pricketh ay**] D. *pricketh.*
7 **Hath taught me . . . store**] T. *Taught me in trifles that I set no store.*
8 **And scape fourth, syns**] T, *but scape forth thence.* D. *but scapt forthe for.*
12 **And thereon spend**] D. *And thereupon go spend.*
13 **lost all my tyme**] MS. *spend.* T. omits *all.* Alt. to *lost* (same hand). *lost my tyme.*
14 **Me lusteth**] D, T. *me lyst.*
A. follows E. exactly.

## 8

My hert I gave the not to do it payn,
But to preserve it was to the taken :
I served the not to be forsaken,
But that I should be rewarded again : 4
I was content thy servaunt to remayn,
But not to be payed under this fasshion :
Nowe syns in the is none othr reason,
Displease the not if that I do refrain : 8
Unsaciat of my woo and thy desir :
Assured be craft to excuse thy fault.
But syns it please the to fain a default 11
Ffarewell I say, parting from the fyer.
For he that belevith bering in hand,
[Ploweth in water and so]weth in the sand. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

Spelling alterations: *e* added to *the* in ll. 3, 8, 11. A. MS. has spelling *the*, following E.

2 **it was to the taken**] T. *lo it to thee was taken.*

3 **to be forsaken**] T. *that I should be forsaken.*

4 **be rewarded again**] T. *receive reward again.*

6 **payed under this . . .**] T. *repayd after ;* later editions *repayd on.* D. *under suche* and omits *this.*

7 **Nowe . . . is none othr**] T. *Nowe . . . is ther none nother.* D. *now sins that. . . .* A. *No.*

10 **to excuse**] T. *for to excuse.*

11 **a default**] T. *defaut.* D. omits this line.

12 **parting**] T. *departing.*
**the fyer**] A. *this fyer.*

13 **that belevith**] T. *that doth beleve.*

14 **Ploweth . . . sand**] Owing to a torn leaf only the latter part of the line remains in the MS.; the lost portion is replaced from D. which reads *Plowith in water and sowith in sande.* T. *Ploweth in the water: and soweth in the sand.* A. *Plowithe in water and sowith in sand.*

## 9

There was never ffile : half so well filed,
To file a file for every smythes intent :
As I was made a filing instrument :
To frame othrs while I was begiled. 4
But reason hath at my follie smyled :
And pardond me sins that I me repent.
Of my lost yeres, and tyme myspent :
For yeuth did me lede and falshode guyded, 8
Yet this trust I have of full great aperaunce :
Syns that decept is ay retourneable,
Of very force it is aggreable; 11
That therewithal be done the recompence.
Then gile begiled plained should be never,
And the reward litle trust for ever. 14

(Signed "Tho.")

There are two versions of this Sonnet in A. MS. Version 1 is similar to T. Version 2 follows E.

1 **There was never ffile**] D. *was never yet fyle.* $A_1$, T. *was never ffile yet . . . yfyled.*

2 **for every**] corrected in MS. to *for any* (later hand). D. *to any.* A (both versions), T. *for any.*

4 **othrs while I**] MS. has curved sign after *r* denoting *s.* A later hand has inserted letter *s.* D. *other.* A. *other. while that I,* both versions. T. *other while that I.*

5 **reason hath**] $A_2$, T. *reason loe hathe.* D. *reason at my foly hathe.*

6 **pardond**] $A_1$. *pardons.*

7 **Of my lost yeres**] D. *my litle perseyvyng.* $T_2$, $A_2$. *of my laste yeres and of my.*

8 **For . . . guyded**] D. *For youthe dyd lede me and falshed gyded.* $A_1$, T. *for youthe led me and falsehood me mysguyded.*

9 **Yet this trust I have of full great**] D. *but this trust I have by gret.* $A_1$. T, *Yet this trust I have of great.*

13 **Then gile begiled plained**].

14 **And the reward . . . ever**] A. T, *And the reward is . . . ever.*

ll. 13–14 in D. run "And gylys Reward is small trust for ever.
Gyle begyld should be blamyd never."

Note that this Sonnet is headed *to my* —— in the D. MS. and has no signature.

## 10

Som fowles there be that have so perfaict sight
Agayn the Sonne their Iyes for to defend,
And som because the light doeth theim offend,
Do never pere but in the darke or nyght. 4
Other reioyse that se the fyer bright,
And wene to play in it as they do pretend,
And fynde the contrary of it that they intend;
Alas of that sort I may be by right, 8
For to withstond her loke I ame not able,
And yet can I not hide me in no darke place,
Remembraunce so foloweth me of that face; 11
So that with tery yen, swolne and unstable,
My destyne to behold her doeth me lede,
Yet do I knowe I run into the glede. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

2 **Agayn**] T. *against.*
4 **Do never pere**] T. *never appeare.*
5 **that se the fyer**] T. *to se the fire so.*
6 **do pretend**] T. *pretend.*
7 **the contrary**] T. omits *the.*
8 **I may be**] T. *may I be.* A. *I may be o).*
10 **And yet**] T. omits *and.*
11 **Remembraunce . . . me**] T. *So foloweth me remembrance.*
12 **So . . . yen**] T. *That with my teary eyn.*
14 **Yet do I**] T. *and yet I.*
Spelling of A. ll. 13, 14 *leede, gleede,* similar to the spelling correction made in the MS. f. 11.

## 11

Bicause I have the still kept fro lyes and blame :
And to my power alwaies have I the honoured;
Unkynd tong! right ill hast thou me rendred;
For suche desert to do me wrek and shame. 4
In nede of succor moost when that I ame,
To aske reward, then standest thou like oon aferd :
Alway moost cold, and if thou speke towerd,
It is as in dreme, unperfaict and lame. 8
And ye salt teres, again my will eche nyght
That are with me, when fayn I would be alone :
Then are ye gone when I should make my mone. 11
And you, so reddy sighes to make me shright,
Then are ye slake when that ye shulde owtestert,
And onely my loke declareth my hert. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

Spelling alteration : *e* added to *the*, l. 2. A. MS. has *the*.

1 **I have the still kept**] T. *I still keept thee*.

2 **have I**] *I* crossed out in MS. later hand. T, A. omit *I*.

3 **right ill**] T. *To yll*. A. *right well*.

6 **then standest thou like**] T. *thou standst like*. A, *then standest thou as*.

7 **and if thou speke towerd**] alt. in MS. by later hand to *Koverd ;* same hand as that in l. 2, see note on *toverd*. T. *and if one word be sayd*. A. *and if thow speake a worde*.

8 **It is as in dreme**] T. *As in a dreme unperfit is the same*. A. *it is in a dreme*.

9 **again**] A, T. *agaynst*.

10 **when fayn I would be**] T. *when I would be*.

12 **And you**] T. *and ye*.

14 **my loke declareth**] A. *my love declareth*. T. *doth my loke declare*.

## 12

I fynde no peace and all my warr is done,
I fere and hope, I burn and freise like yse,
I fley above the wynde, yet can I not arrise,
And noght I have and all the worold I seson; 4
That loseth nor locketh holdeth me in prison;
And holdeth me not; yet can I scape nowise:
Nor letteth me lyve nor dye at my devise:
And yet of deth it gyveth me occasion. 8
Withoute Iyen I se; and withoute tong I plain:
I desire to perisshe, and yet I aske helthe;
I love an othr: and thus I hate myself; 11
I fede me in sorrowe: and laughe in all my pain:
Likewise displeaseth me boeth deth and lyff:
And my delite is causer of this stryff. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

This Sonnet is also found in P. as well as in D. and Tottel; the version is faulty. It is omitted in A.

3 **I fley above the wynde**] D. *I flye aboute the heavin.* T. *I flye aloft.*
**yet can I not arrise**] P. *yet cannot rise.*
4 **and all**] P. *yet all.*
5 **That loseth nor locketh holdeth**] MS. spelling *loseth* for *looseth.* T. *that lockes nor loseth holdeth.*
6 **And holdeth**] T, P. *and holdes.*
**I scape**] P. *I escape.* T. *I scrape.*
7 **Nor letteth**] T. *lettes.* P. *letes.*
8 **me occasion**] P. *none occasion.*
9 **Withoute . . . withoute**] T. *without eye I se, without.* D. *without yes.*
10 **I desire . . . helthe**] T. *I wish to perysh yet I aske for helth.* P. *yet aske I helth.*
11 **and thus**] P. *and yet.* T. *and thus* (*thus* omitted in second and later editions).
**I hate**] P. *I have.*
12 **I fede me**] P. *I feed.*
13 **Likewise . . . deth and lyff**] P. *likewise pleaseth me.* T. *Lo thus displeaseth me.* D, P, T. *both dethe and liffe.* MS. reads *lyff and deth* (scribal error).
14 **causer of this stryff**] P. *causer of my gryef.*

## 13

Though I my self be bridilled of my mynde,
Retorning me backeward by force expresse;
If thou seke honor to kepe thy promes,
Who may thee hold my hert but thou thyself unbind. 4
Sigh thou no more, syns no way man may fynde
Thy vertue to let: though that frowerdnes
Of ffortune me holdeth; and yet, as I may gesse,
Though other be present, thou art not all behinde. 8
Suffice it then that thou be redy there
At all howres: still under the defence
Of tyme, trouth, and love, to save thee from offence: 11
Cryeng "I burne in a lovely desire
With my maisteres"; that may not followe;
Whereby his absence torneth him to sorrowe. 14

(Signed "Tho.")

This Sonnet is absent from Tottel.

5 **No way man may**] A. *no may man may.* Scribal error for *no way.*

10 **howres**]. The spelling of this word varies. (See next Sonnet, l. 5)

13 **my maisteres**] A. *my dere mystres.* Note that in the text *maisteres* is a trisyllable.

## 14

My galy charged with forgetfulnes,
Thorrough sharpe sees, in wynter nyghtes doeth pas,
Twene Rock and Rock : and eke myn enemy, alas,
That is my Lorde, sterith with cruelnes. 4
And every owre a thought in redines :
As tho that deth were light in suche a case;
An endles wynd doeth tere the sayll a pase,
Of forced sightes and trusty ferefulnes. 8
A rayn of teris : a clowde of derk disdain,
Hath done the wered cordes great hinderaunce :
Wrethed with error and eke with ignoraunce. 11
The starres be hid that led me to this pain :
Drowned is reason that should me comfort :
And I remain dispering of the port. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

2 **Thorrough**] A. *Throughe.* T. *Through.*

3 **myn enemy**] T. *my fo.*

4 **sterith**] A. *stirreth* (= *steereth*).

5 **owre**] for variant spelling see *howres*, preceding Sonnet, l. 10.

6 **As tho . . . light**] A. *As tho that deth were life. life* overwritten original reading *light.* T. omits *eke.*

8 **sightes**] MS. spelling for *sighs*; but see Sonnet No. 13, l. 5, for correct spelling.

11 **Wrethed . . . and eke**] original scribal spelling in MS. is *Wretched* with *c* crossed out (same hand). T. omits *eke.*

12 **led me**] T. *leade me.* The word is a trans. of Italian *attorto* (*twisted, turned*).

13 **Drowned is reason**] T. *Drownde is reason that should be my comfort.*

## 15

Avysing the bright bemes of these fayer Iyes,
Where he is that myn oft moisteth and wassheth,
The werid mynde streght from the hert departeth,
For to rest in his woroldly paradise; 4
And fynde the swete bitter under this gyse.
What webbes he hath wrought well he perceveth:
Whereby with himself on love he playneth:
That spurreth with fyer and bridilleth with Ise. 8
Thus is it in suche extremitie brought;
In frossen though nowe, and nowe it stondeth in flame:
Twyst misery and welth twyst ernest and game; 11
But few glad, and many a dyvers thought.
With sore repentaunce of his hardines:
Of suche a rote cometh ffruyte fruytles. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

1 **Avysing . . . Iyes**] A. *advising.* T. *those fayre eyes.*
2 **Where he is . . . moisteth**] T. *Where he abides . . . moistes.*
3 **departeth**] A. *parteth.*
4 **For to rest . . . woroldly**] A. *For to rest in . . . worldlye.* T. *to rest within . . . worldly.*
5 **And fynde the swete bitter**] T. *And bitter findes the swete.*
6 **What webbes he**] T. *What webbes there he.*
7 **Whereby with**] T. *Whereby then with.*
**playneth**] read as three syllables.
8 **spurreth . . . bridilleth with**] T. *spurs . . . brydleth eke.*
9 **Thus . . . brought**] T. *In such extremity thus is he brought.* A. *Thus is in it . . . brought.*
10 **In frossen . . . flame**] T. *frosen now cold, and now he standes in flame.*
11 **Twyst . . . twyst**] T. *Twist wo and welth; betwixt.*
12 **But few glad**] T. *With seldome glad.*
13 **With sore**] T. *In sore.*
14 **cometh ffruyte fruytles**] A. *cometh frute fruteles.* T. *lo cometh frute frutelesse.*

## 16

Ever myn happ is slack and slo in comyng
Desir encresing, myn hope uncertain:
That leve it or wayt, it doeth me like pain;
And Tigre like, swift it is in parting. 4
Alas, the snow shalbe black and scalding;
The See waterles: fisshe in the montain;
The Tamys shall retorn back into his fontain;
And where he rose the sonne shall take lodging; 8
Ere that I in this fynde peace or quyetenis,
Or that love, or my lady rightwisely,
Leve to conspire again me wrongfully; 11
And if that I have after suche bitternis
Any thing swete; my mouth is owte of tast:
And all my trust and travaill is but wast. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

1 **myn happ**] A. *mye happ.*
2 **Desir encresing**] T. *desire encreasyng ay.*
**myn hope**] A. *my hope.*
3 **That leve . . . pain**] $T_1$. *That love or wait it, alike doth me payne.* $T_2$. and subsequent editions *With doubtful love that but increaseth pain. leve = cease.*
4 **Tigre like swift**] T. *so swift.*
5 **Alas . . . scalding**] T. *Alas the snow black shall it be and scalding.* MS. spelling *moyntain*, spelt to compare with *fontain*, l. 7
6 **fissh in**] T. *and fishe upon.*
**montain**] MS. spelling *moyntain* (scribal slip?); see No. 18, l. 1.
7 **The Tamys shall retorn back**] T. *The Temis shall back return the montain* Wyat amends to *Thames.* The Italian reads: *D'un medesimo fonte Euphrate, Tigre.*
8 **take lodging**] T. *take his.*
9 **Ere that I**] T. *ere I.*
10 **Or . . . rightwisely**] A. *or that Love or my Ladye rightuouslye.*
12 **And if that I have**] T. *and if I have.*
13 **Any thing swete**] T. *one drop of swete.*
14 **And all**] A. *That all.*

## 17

Love and fortune and my mynde, remembr
Of that that is nowe, with that, that hath ben,
Do torment me so that I very often
Envy theim beyonde all mesure. 4
Love sleith myn hert; fortune is depriver
Of all my comfort; the folisshe mynde then
Burneth and plaineth, as one that sildam
Lyveth in rest still in displeasure. 8
My pleasaunt dayes they flete away and passe,
But daily yet the ill doeth chaunge into the wours;
And more than the half is run of my cours. 11
Alas, not of steill, but of brickell glasse,
I see that from myn hand falleth my trust:
And all my thoughtes are dasshed into dust. 14

(Signed "Wyat.")

1 **Love and fortune . . . remembr**] T. *Love fortune and my minde which do remember.*
2 **Of that . . . ben**] T. *Eke that is now, and that that once hath bene.*
3 **Do torment . . . often**] T. *Torment my hart so sore that very often.*
4 **Envy theim**] T. *I hate and envy them.*
5 **hert; fortune**] T. *hart while fortune.*
7 **that sildam**] $T_1$. *that very sildam.* Arber's reprint omits *very.*
8 **Lyveth in rest still in**] orig. *and rest* corrected to *in rest.* A. *Lyveth in rest.* $T_2$. *so styl in.*
10 **But daily . . . wours**] T. *And daily doth myne yll change to the worse.*
11 **And more . . . cours**] T. *while more than halfe is runne now of my course.*
12 **brickell**] A. *brittell.* T. *brittle.*

## 18

How oft have I, my dere and cruell foo,
With those your Iyes, for to get peace and truyse,
Profferd you myn herte but you do not use
Emong so high thinges to cast your mynde so lowe. 4
Yf any othr loke for it, as ye trowe,
There vayn weke hope doeth greately them abuse :
And thus I disdain that that ye refuse :
It was ons myn it can no more be so. 8
Yf I then it chase, nor it in you can fynde
In this exile no manner of comfort :
Nor lyve alone nor where he is called resort; 11
He may wander from his naturall kynd.
So shall it be great hurt unto us twayn,
And yowres the losse and myn the dedly pain. 14

(Signed "Tho.")

2 With those . . . truyse] T. *With my great pain to get some peace or truce.*
3 Profferd] T. *given.*
4 Emong so high thinges] T. *in so hie thinges.* MS. *thinge* for *thinges.*
6 There vayn weke hope] A. *Their vayne weite hope.*
7 And thus I disdain that . . . refuse] T. *And that thus I disdayne that you refuse.*
8 can no more] *no* omitted in MS., inserted later hand—clearly a scribal omission. A. *may* for *can.*
9 Yf I . . . fynde] T. *If you it chase that it in you can finde.*
14 yowres] Wyat's spelling in the Psalms. The text here is obscured by later writing.

## 19

Like to these unmesurable montayns,
Is my painfull lyff the burden of Ire,
For of great height be they, and high is my desire;
And I of teres, and they be full of fontayns; 4
Under craggy rockes they have full barren playns:
Hard thoughtes in me, my wofull mynde doeth tyre;
Small fruyt and many leves their toppes do atyre:
Small effect with great trust in me remayns. 8
The boyseus wyndes oft their high bowghes do blast:
Hote sighes from me continuelly be shed;
Cattell in theim: and in me love is fed; 11
Immoveable ame I: and they are full stedfast;
Of that restles birdes they have the tune and note:
And I alwayes plaintes that passe thorough my throte. 14

(Signed "Tho.")

1 **Like to these**] T. *Like unto these.*
2 **Is my**] T. *So is my.*
3 **For of great height be they**] T. *For hye be they.*
5 **full barren**] T. omits *full.*
8 **Small effect with great trust**] T. *With small effect great trust.*
9 **boyseus**] A. *boyst'ous.* T. *boystous.*
10 **from me**] T. *in me.*
11 **Cattell in theim . . . fed**] T. *Wilde beastes in them, fierce love in me is fed.*
12 **Immoveable**] T. *unmoveable.*
**are full stedfast**] T. omits *are full.*
13 **Of that restles birdes**] T. *Of singing birdes.*
14 **that passe thorough**] T. *passing through.*

## 20

The lyvely sperkes that issue from those Iyes,
Against the which ne vaileth no defence,
Have prest myn hert and done it none offence,
With quaking pleasur more than ons or twise. 4
Was never man could anything devise
The sonne bemes to torn with so great vehemence,
To dase mans sight, as by their bright presence.
Dased ame I, muche like unto the gyse 8
Of one ystricken with dynt of lightening:
Blynded with the stroke, erryng here and there,
So call I for helpe, I not when ne where, 11
The pain of my falt patiently bering.
For after the blase, as is no wounder
Of dedly nay here I the ferefull thounder. 14

(Signed "Tho.")

The D. version with slight differences in spelling follows E. exactly.

2 **ne vaileth**] T. *there vaileth.*

3 **Have prest**] T. *Have persed.* MS. reading is the trans. of *folgorando*.

6 **The sonne**] T. omits *the*.

9 **ystricken**] MS. spelling *Istricken*. T. *stricken.*

10 **Blynded . . . erryng**] T. *blind . . . and errying.* $T_2$. and later editions *blind . . . and crying.*

12 **my falt**] MS. has *t* crossed out and alt. to *l*, later hand. D. *my faute.* A, T. *my fall.*

**bering**] T. *bearyng.* Later editions, *learnyng.*

13 **For . . . wounder**] T. *For streight after the blase (as is no wonder).*

14 **Of dedly nay**] D. *of dedly noys.* T. *of deadly noyse.*

Nott gave the correct reading in this instance, and writes "*nay*" in quotation marks, rightly noting that the whole meaning of the Sonnet rests on *nay*.

## 21

Suche vayn thought as wonted to myslede me :
In desert hope by well assured mone :
Maketh me from compayne to live alone :
In folowing hir whome reason bid me fle. 4
She fleith as fast by gentill crueltie :
And after her myn hert would fain be gone :
But armed sighes my way do stoppe anon :
Twixt hope and drede lacking my libertie. 8
Yet, as I gesse, under disdaynfull browe,
One beame of pitie is in her clowdy loke,
Which comforteth the mynde that erst for fere shoke. 11
And, therewithall bolded, I seke the way how
To utter the smert that I suffre within;
But suche it is I not how to begyn. 14

The A. version follows the text, with variations of spelling only, as for example, *my hart* for *myn hert*, l. 6.

3 **Maketh**] T. *Makes.*

4 **bid**] T. *bids.*

5 **She fleith as fast**] T. *so fleeth she.* This line in T. is transposed to l. 8, and ll. 6–8 become in T. 5–7.

7 **do stoppe**] D. *doeth stop.*

8 **lacking**] T. *locking.*

9 **disdaynfull browe**] First MS. reading *that skornfull browe*, corrected by Wiat. D, *the skornfull browe.*

10 **of pitie**] T. *of ruth.*

11 **comforteth**] T. *comforties.*

12 **And . . . how**] T. *That bolded straight the way then seke I how.*

13 **To utter . . . within**] T. *To utter forth the smart I bide within.*

Following Sonnet 20 and preceding Sonnet 21 in the A. MS. two Epigrams are run together to form a Sonnet. This fact is, I think, quite sufficient proof that the A. MS. was not authoritative.

## 22

I abide and abide and better abide,
And, after the olde proverbe, the happie daye :
And ever my ladye to me dothe saye,
" Let me alone and I will provyde. 4
I abide and abide and tarrye the tyde
And with abiding spede well ye maye :
Thus do I abide I wott allwaye,
Nother obtayning nor yet denied. 8
Aye me ! this long abidyng
Semithe to me as who sayethe
A prolonging of a dieng dethe, 11
Or a refusing of a desyred thing.
Moche ware it bettre for to be playne,
Then to saye abide and yet shall not obtayne. 14

In the D. MS. only.

## 23

Dyvers dothe use as I have hard and kno,
When that to chaunge ther ladies do beginne,
To mone and waile, and never for to lynne,
Hoping therby to pease ther painefull woo. 4
And some ther be, that when it chaunceth soo
That women chaunge, and hate wher love hath bene,
Thei call them fals, and think with wordes to wynne
The hartes of them wich otherwhere doth goo. 8
But as for me, though that by chaunse indede
Change hath out-worne the favor that I had,
I will not wayle, lament, nor yet be sad, 11
Nor call her fals that falsley ded me fede;
But let it passe and think it is of kinde,
That often chaunge doeth plese a womans minde. 14

In the D. MS. only.

## 24

Mye love toke skorne my servise to retaine
Wherin me thought she usid crueltie :
Sins with good will I lost my libretye
To followe her wich causith all my payne. 4
Might never care cause me for to refrayne :
But onlye this wich is extremytie :
Gyving me nought, alas, nor to agre
That as I was her man I might remayne. 8
But sins that thus ye list to ordre me,
That wolde have bene your servaunt true and faste,
Displese the not, my doting dayes bee paste : 11
And with my losse to leve I must agre.
For as there is a certeyne tyme to rage.
So ys ther tyme suche madnes to aswage. 14

From the D. MS.
Found also in Tottel.
1 **toke skorne**] T. *to scorne.* Nott followed Tottel instead of the MS. here.
4 Tottel omits this line.
5 **care cause me for**] T. *wo yet cause me.*
7 **Gyving me**] T. *To geve me.*
**nor**] alt. from *as*, same hand.
8 **her man**] T. *your man.*
11 **the not**] T. *you not.*
**dayes bee**] T. *time is.*

## 25

To rayle or jest ye know I use it not
  Tho that such cause somtyme in folkes I finde :
  And tho to chaunge ye list to sett your minde,
  Love yt who liste, in faithe I like yt not. 4
And if ye ware to me as ye are not,
  I wolde be lothe to se you so unkinde;
  But sins your faith muste nedes be so, be kinde,
  Though I hate it, I praye you love yt not. 8
Thinges of grete waight I never thought to crave :
  This is but small : of right denye it not :
  Your fayning wayis as yet forget them not, 11
But like rewarde let other lovers have.
  That is to saye : for servis true and faste
  To long delaies and chaunging at the laste. 14

In the D. MS. only.

## 26

Unstable dreme, according to the place,
Be stedfast ons : or els at leist be true :
By tasted swetenes make me not to rew
The sudden losse of thy fals fayned grace. 4
By goode respect, in such a daungerous case,
Thou broughtes not her into this tossing mew;
But madest my sprite lyve my care to renew,
My body in tempest her succor to embrace. 8
The body ded, the spryt had his desir
Paynles was thou : thothr in delight;
Why then, alas, did it not kepe it right, 11
Retorning to lepe into the fire?
And where it was at wysshe it could not remain,
Such mockes of dremes they torne to dedly pain. 14

5 **a daungerous]** A. omits *a*.
6 **this tossing mew]** T. *these tossing seas*.
7 **lyve my care to renew]** T. *to live my care tencrease*.
8 **succor to embrace]** T. *delight timbrace*.
10 **thothr]** T. *the other*.
12 **retorning]** T. *but thus return; retorning* has the force of four syllables in the ext.
13 **it could]** T. *could*.
14 **they torne]** T. *do turne*.
*Note.*—Tottel alters the rhyme of ll. 6–7 to avoid the word *mew*.

## 27

You that in love finde lucke and habundaunce,
And live in lust and joyful jolitie,
Arise, for shame, do away your sluggardie;
A rise, I say, do may some observaunce! 4
Let me in bed lye dreming in mischaunce;
Let me remembre the happs most unhappy,
That me betide in May most comonly,
As oon whome love list litil to advaunce. 8
Sephanes saide true that my nativitie
Mischaunced was with the ruler of the May:
He gest, I prove of that, the veritie; 11
In May, my welth, and eke my liff I say
Have stonde so oft in such perplexitie.
Reioyse! let me dreme of your felicitie. 14

(Signed "Tho.")

1 **habundaunce**] T. *swete abundance.*
2 **and joyful**] T. *of joyfull.*
3 **Arise . . . do away**] MS. spelling *arrise*, but in l. 4 as in text. T. *do way.*
5 **in mischaunce**] T. *of mischaunce.*
6 **the happs most unhappy**] T. *my missehappes unhappy.* This line is omitted in A.
9 **Sephanes**] MS. spelling of final letters difficult to make out. A. *Sephances.* T. *Stephan.*
10 **Mischaunced**] A. *mischaunce.*
11 **He gest, I prove of that**] A. *He gest of that I prove.*
12 **my liff**] T. *my wittes.*
13 **stonde**] T. *stand.* A. *stond.*
14 **Reioyse**] T. *Joye.*

## 28

If waker care; if sodayne pale Coulor;
If many sighes, with litle speche to playne,
Now Joy, now woo if they my chere distayne,
For hope of small, if muche to fere therfore; 4
To hast to slake my passe lesse or more,
By signe of love, then do I love agayne.
If thou ask whome; sure, sins I did refrayne
Brunet, that set my welth in such a rore, 8
Thunfayned chere of Phillis hath the place
That Brunet had; she hath and ever shal.
She from my self now hath me in her grace: 11
She hath in hand my witt, my will, my all:
My hert alone wel worthie she doeth staye,
Without whose helpe, skant do I live a daye. 14

(Signed "Tho.")

5 **To hast to slake**] T. *to haste or slack.*
**my passe lesse**] T. *my pace to lesse.*
8 **Brunet, that set my welth . . . rore**] alt. by Wiat from original *her that did set our country in a rore.*
12 **my all**] T, A. *and all.*
No. 28 is the last Sonnet in the Egerton MS.

## 29

The piller pearishd is whearto I lent:
  The strongest staye of myne unquyet mynde;
  The lyke of it no man agayne can fynde,
  Ffrom East to West, still seking thoughe he went. 4
To myne unhappe! for happe away hath rent
  Of all my joye, the verye bark and rynde;
  And I (alas) by chaunce am thus assynde
  Dearlye to moorne till death do it relent. 8
But syns that thus it is by destenye,
  What can I more but have a wofull hart,
  My penne in playnt, my voyce in wofull crye, 11
My mynde in woe, my bodye full of smart.
  And I my self, my self alwayes to hate
  Till dreadfull death, do ease my dolefull state. 14

From the A. MS., f. 87b. Found only in A. and T.

14 **do ease**] A. reads *cause*, evident error for *ease* or *cease*, either word makes sense.

ll. 12–14 are original, and though less poetical than Petrarch's conclusion express Wiat's sincere feeling, and show also that he had a definite purpose in writing this Sonnet. It is evidently late, and the sentiment expressed fits in with Cromwell's fall in 1540. The Italian concludes with these lines:—

> "O nostra vita! ch è si bella in vista
> Com perde agevolmente in un mattino
> Quel che'n molt' anni a gran pena s'acquista.'

## 30

Such is the course that natures kind hath wrought
That snakes have time to cast away their stynges;
Ainst chainde prisoners what nede defence be sought?
The fierce lyon will hurt no yelden thinges. 4
Why shoulde such spite be nursed in thy thought,
Sith all these powers are prest under thy winges;
And thou seest and reason thee hath taught
What mischief malice many waies it bringes. 8
Consider eke that spight availeth naught;
Therefore this song thy fault to thee it singes;
Displease thee not, for saiyng thus, me thought,
Nor hate thou him from whom no hate forth springes; 12
For furies that in hell be execrable,
For that they hate are made most miserable. 14

3 **Ainst**] suspiciously like an emendation. The most probable reading is *against*.
5 **in thy thought**] $T_1$. *then in thy thought*, almost certainly an interpolation. $T_2$. alt. to *then thy thought*; later editions *then by thought*.
Found only in Tottel.

## 31

The flaming sighes that boyle within my brest
Sometime breake forth; and they can well declare
The hartes unrest, and how that it doth fare,
The pain therof, the grief, and all the rest. 4
The watred eyen, from whence the teares doe fall,
Do fele some force or els they would be drye:
The wasted flesh of color ded can trye.
And something tell what swetenesse is in gall. 8
And he that luste to see, and do disarne,
How care can force within a weried minde,
Come he to me:—I am that place assynd. 11
But for all this no force it doth no harme;
The wound alas happe in some other place,
From whence no toole away the skar can race. 14

But you, that of such like have had your part,
Can best be judge: wherefore, my frend so deare,
I thought it good my state should now appeare
To you, and that ther is no great desart. 18
And wher as you, in weighty matters great
Of fortune saw the shadow that you know:
For trifling thinges, I now am striken so;
That though I fele my hart doth wound and beat, 22
I sit alone, save on the second day
My fever comes, with whom I spend the time
In burning heat while that she list assigne.
And who hath helth and libertie alway 26
Let him thank God, and let him not provoke
To have the like of this my painfull stroke. 28

8 **something**] $T_2$. *sometime.*
13–14 cf. Epigram, ll. 7–8

"Sure I am Brian this wounde shall heale agayne
But yet alas the scarre shall styll remayne."

This double Sonnet is found in Tottel. The spelling differs considerably from that of the E. MS. The faulty punctuation of T. is corrected.

Alas madame for stabbing of a knife
Habe I sommy yo^r mynd thus offended?
Habe I then done so grevously amisse
that by no meanes it may be amended?

Tho.

they to revenge yon^r mind
an other knife shall have my life ended.

for to my mother the my first did suck
the next shall out of my brest it pluck

Ein Harlgwydd Jesu Crist yr hwn a udawodd
feddiant in Egwlys i ollwng pob pechadur a
fyddo gwir edifeiriol a yn credu ynddo. ef o i
fawr drugaredd a taddeuo iti dy gamweddau
a thrwy ei grodurdeb ef a gumadhewid i mi i
th ollyngaf o'th holl bechodau yn enw r tad
a r mab a r ysbryd glan Amen
yn ol y gollyngadod y dywy yr offeiriad i r
Clif gusen tha i neidyg gan dywedyd
yr Arglwydd Iesu a datwo dy gorph a th enaid
i fywyd tragywyddol Amen

Gweddiau

O drugarocaf Dduw yr yn ol fawlaw gwrydd

Our Lord Jesus Christ who hath left
power to his Church to absolve all penitents
truly repentant & coloure in him
great mercy forgive thee thine offence
& by his authority committed to me
absolve thee from all thy sins in the name of the
father sonne & holy ghost Amen
Then after y^e absolution the priest gives
the a kisse of peace saying
the Lord Jesu bless thy soule
life everlasting Amen
Let us pray
O most mighty God & merciful to an multitude

# EPIGRAMS

1

Who hath heard of such cruelty before?
That when my plaint remonstrated her my woe
That caused it; she, cruell more and more,
Wisshed eche stitche, as she did sit and soo,
Had pykt myn hert for to encrease my wore;
And, as I think, she thought it had bee so;
For yt she thought — "This is the best to dede" :
Her yet did kyst, and made herself to blede.

(Signed "Thos")

2

She sat and sowde that hath done me the wrong
When, in my plaint, and have done many a grief
And whilst she heard my plaint of pitiess song,
Wisshed my hert the sampler as it lay.
The blind maister whome I have served so long :
Grudging to here that for dit hele her sayd,
Made her own weapon do her finger blede,
To fele if pricking were so good as dede.

(Signed "Thos")

FACSIMILE PAGE, FOL. 31

*Brit. Mus., Egerton* 2711] [*To face p.* 45., *Vol. I.*

# EPIGRAMS

## 1

Who hath herd of suche crueltye before?
That when my plaint remembred her my woo
That caused it; she, cruell more and more,
Wisshed eche stitche, as she did sit and soo, 4
Had prykt myn hert for to encrese my sore.
And, as I thinck, she thought it had ben so:
For as she thought: "This is his hert in dede":
She pricked herd, and made herself to blede. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

This first epigram from the E. MS. is on fol. 29b; the corrections are in Wiat's hand.

1 **crueltye**] alt. by Wiat from *tyrannye*. D. *crueltye*, alt. to *tyrannye*. T. *What man hath hard such cruelty before?*

5 **prykt**] alt. by Wiat from *prycked*.

**myn**] *n* added by Wiat, for the sake of euphony, before *hert*.

8 **pricked herd**] D. *pricked her*.

## 2

She sat and sowde that hath done me the wrong:
Whereof I plain, and have done many a daye:
And whilst she herd my plaint in pitious song,
Wisshed my hert the samplar as it lay. 4
The blind maister whome I have served so long:
Grudging to here that he did here her saye;
Made her own wepon do her fynger blede,
To fele if pricking were so good in dede. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

E., fol. 87a.

3 **she**] A. *the*, copyist's error for *she*.

**in pitious**] corrected from *and pitious* by Wiat.

4 **Wisshed . . . lay**] T. *She wisht my hert the samplar, that it lay.*

5 **so long**] A. omits *so*.

7 **Made . . . do**] Wiat's alteration from *With her owne wepon did make;* this is the reading of D.

8 **in dede**] Wiat's alteration from *a dede*. A, D, T. *in dede*.

## 3

Alas madame for stelyng of a kysse,
Have I somuch your mynd then offended?
Have I then done so grevously amysse,
That by no meanes it may be amended? 4
Then revenge you: and the next way is this:
An othr kysse shall have my lyffe endid.
For to my mowth the first my hert did suck,
The next shall clene oute of my brest it pluck. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

This epigram has a special value, as it contains corrections in Wiat's own hand writing, at two different periods, as well as corrections by two other people (see p. 45).

Wiat's original version is as follows:—

1 **stelyng**] *robbing*. This correction was probably made about the time that the poem was copied; the ink is faded, and the same colour as the signature.

*Later Corrections.*

5 **Then revenge . . . this**] The original reading is: *Revenge you then and sure ye shall not mysse* alt. to *Theirs to revenge*, and finally as in text.

6 **An othr kysse . . . endid**] alt. from *To have my lyffe with an othr ended.*

7 **the first**] *the ton.*

8 **The next shall clene**] *the tothr shall.*

Corrections of ll. 5–8 are in ink which has kept its colour, but unmistakably Wiat's hand.

*Spurious Corrections.*

4 **it may be amended**] *the mattr may be mended.* Neither Wiat nor the scribes write *r* in this form; l. 4, as in text is strongly characteristic of Wiat's style, and the phrase occurs in his dispatches.

6 **lyffe endid**] *lyff throughe endid.* This alteration is a late 16th-century hand, and resembles the handwriting of the letters in the MS. *throughe* has been inserted between *lyff* and *endid*, and crossed out, and *throughe ended* (same hand) is written in the margin. See reproduction, p. 44.

*Variants in* A, T.

2 **then offended**] A, T. *therin offendid.*

3 **Have I then done**] T. *Or have I done.*

4 **it may be amended**] A. *the matter may be mended.*

5 **Then . . . this**] T. *Revenge you then, the rediest way is this.*

6 **shall . . . endid**] T. *my life it shall have ended.* A. *shall . . . throughe endid.*

## 4

The wandering gadlyng in the sommer tyde,
That fyndes the Adder with his recheles fote,
Startes not dismayd so soudenly a side
As Jalous dispite did, tho there war no bote, 4
When that he sawe me sitting by her side,
That of my helth is very croppe and rote.
It pleased me then to have so fair a grace,
To styng that hert, that would have my place. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

fol. 32a.
1 gadlyng] altered from *galdyng*, Wiat's hand.
4 As Jalous dispite did] P. *as did gelosy.*
7 It pleased me then] P. *it pleased me.*
8 that hert . . . place] P. *the wight that would have had my place.* T. *the hart that would have had.*
The D. MS. follows the text exactly.

## 5

What nedeth these threning wordes and wasted wynde :
All this cannot make me restore my pray :
To robbe your good I wis is not my mynde :
Nor causeles your fair hand did I display. 4
Let love be judge, or els whome next we meit;
That may boeth here what you and I can say :
She toke from me an hert; and I a glove from her;
Let us se nowe, if thon) be wourth thothr. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

1 What . . . threning] A, T. *What needes these threatnyng.*
5 meit] T. *fynde*, correction made for the rhyme.
7 She toke . . . hert] T. *She rest my hert.*
8 Let us . . . thothr] T. *Let us se then if one be worth the other*

## 6

Ryght true it is : and said full yore agoo :
" Take hede of him that by thy back the claweth " ;
For none is wourse than is a frendely ffoo :
Though they seme good : all thing that thee deliteth : 4
Yet knowe it well, that in thy bosom crepeth ;
For many a man such fier oft knydeleth,
That with the blase his berd syngeth. 7

(Signed "Tho.")

This poem is headed "Sonet" by later hand; this mistake has led to the following Epigram (No. 7) being incorporated with No. 6 as a Sonnet in the A. MS.

2 **thy back**] T. *the backe.*

4 **they seme**] $T_1$. *he seme.* $T_2$. and later editions, *thee seme.*

5 **thy bosom**] $T_2$. *the bosom.* $T_1$. and later editions, *thy bosom.*

6 **oft kyndeleth**] T. *ofttimes he kindleth.* A. *ofte tyme suche fyre kindleth.*

7 **his berd syngeth**] T. *his berd himself he singeth.*

## 7

What wourde is that that chaungeth not,
Though it be tourned and made in twain ?
It is myn aunswer, God it wot,
And eke the causer of my payn. 4
A love rewardeth with disdain :
Yet is it loved : what would ye more :
It is my helth eke and my sore. 7

(Signed "Tho.")

This poem is headed "Anna" in a later hand. The margin has been cut down, almost obliterating the heading.

3 **myn aunswer**] T. *mine Anna.*

4 **And eke the causer**] A. *and the cause.* T. *the only causer.*

5 **A love rewardeth with disdain**] A. *A Love with disdayn* (incomplete). T. *my love that medeth with disdaine.*

6 **would ye**] A, T. *will you.*

7 **helth . . . sore**] A, T. *satve and eke my sove.*

## 8

A ladye gave me a gyfte she had not;
And I receyvid her guifte I toke not:
She gave it me willinglye and yet she wold not:
And I receyvid it albeit I coulde not. 4
If she geve it me I force not:
And if she take it agayne she cares not:
Conster what this is: and tell not:
For I am fast sworne I maye not. 8

From the A. MS.
2 I toke] T. *which I toke; which* inserted in A. and crossed out again.

## 9

Some tyme I fled the fyre that me brent,
By see by land, by water and by wynd;
And now I folow the coles that be quent,
From Dovor to Calais against my mynde. 4
Lo how desire is boeth sprong and spent;
And he may se that whilome was so blynd:
And all his labor now he laugh to scorne
Mashed in the breers that erst was all to-torne. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

1 me brent] T. *me so brent*.
2 By see by land] alt. by Wiat from *by hilles and dales*. D. *by hilles by dales*.
3 I folow the coles] T. *the coales I folow*.
4 against my mynde] T. *with willing minde*.
5 boeth sprong] T. *both furth sprong*.
7 now he laugh] T. *laughes he now*.
8 Mashed . . . to-torne] T. *Meashed in the breers that erst was onely torne*. A. *Mashed in the bryers that earst was all to torne*.

The first four lines of this Epigram are inserted among Wiat's group of poems in the Harl. MS. and headed "Tho. W."

## 10

He is not ded that somtyme hath a fall :
The sonne retornth that was under the clowde :
And when fortune hath spitt oute all her gall,
I trust good luck to me shalbe allowede. 4
For I have sene a shipp into haven fall,
After the storme hath broke boeth mast and shrowde :
And eke the willowe that stowpith with the wynde,
Doeth ryse again, and greater wode doeth bynd. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

Spelling corrections in MS. are in this instance n the same ink as the signature, and that of the correction of Epigram 9. In this instance the spelling corrections appear to be authentic—final *e* is crossed out of *clowde*, l. 2 ; *shrowde*, l. 6 ; *allowede*, l. 4 has both *e's* crossed out.

1 **He is . . . fall**] alt. by Wiat from *I ame not ded all though I had a fall.* This correction is in different ink from the signature and the alterations of spelling. D, P. *I am not ded altho I had a fall.*

2 **under the clowde**] P. *that was hid under clowd. Clowde*, MS. spelling as text, with later corrections. This is the spelling of D, as also *allowede, shrowde* (ll. 4, 6).

4 **to me shalbe**] P. *shalbe to me.*

5 **into haven**] P. *into the haven.*

6 **After . . . mast and shrowde**] P. *when storme hath broke both mast and also shrowde.* T. *After that . . . maste and shroude.*

7 **eke the willowe that stowpith**] *stowpith* spelling of D, P. ; the MS. spelling *stoppeth* is avoided here as misleading to sense. T. *the willow eke.*

## 11

The furyous gonne, in his raging yre,
When that the bowle is ramed in to sore
And that the flame cannot part from the fire,
Cracketh in sonder : and in the ayer doeth rore 4
The shevered peces : right so doeth my desire,
Whose flame encreseth from more to more.
Wych to let owt I dare not loke nor speke;
So now hard force my hert doeth all to breke. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

1 **The furyous gonne**] first reading, *Like as the canon;* alt. by Wiat to *Like as the bombard*, second alteration by Wiat as in text.
**raging**] T. *most raging.*
2 **When that**] A. omits *that.*
3 **And that the flame**] A. *and it the same.*
4 **Cracketh . . . doeth rore**] T. *Crackes . . . doe rore.*
5 **right so**] T. *so.*
6 **Whose flame**] first reading *which daily;* alt. by Wiat.
**encreseth**] T. *encreaseth ay.*
7 **Wych to let owt**] first reading *Whose flame to open;* alt. by Wiat as in text.
8 **So now hard force**] T. *So inward force.* A. *So that of force.*

## 12

Thenmy of liff, decayer of all kynde,
That with his cold withers away the grene :
This othr nyght me in my bed did fynde,
And offered me to rid my fiever clene. 4
And I did graunt : so did dispaire me blynde.
He drew his bowe with arrowe sharp and kene,
And strake the place where love had hit befor,
And drave the first dart deper more and more. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

1 **Thenmy**] T. *The enmy.*
2 **cold**] MS. spelling *could* with *u* crossed out by same hand.
5 **dispaire**] altered from *dispere* in Wiat's hand.
6 **arrowe**] T. *arrowes.*

## 13

Nature that gave the bee so seet a grace
To fynd hony of so wonderous fasshion;
Hath taught the spider oute of the same place
To fetche poyson, by straynge alteration; 4
Tho this be straynge, it is a straynger case,
With oon kysse, by secret operation,
Boeth these at ons, in those your lippes to fynde;
In chaunge whereof, I leve my hert behinde. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

1 **grace**] MS. spelling alt. to *grase* and *plase*, l. 3; original *c* is clearly visible underneath (scribe's correction).

2 **fynd**] first reading, *get*; alt. by Wiat. D. *gett.*

**wonderous**] *e* crossed out in MS.

4 **poyson**] D. *poysons.*

**straynge**] orig. MS. spelling *straunge* (also l. 5); Wiat's correction. The extreme use of the letter *y* is a characteristic of Wiat's spelling.

6 **kysse**] *sse*, 3 last letters inserted in scribe's hand over a letter undistinguishable. MS. spelling *kys*, alt. by Wiat.

7 **these . . . those**] MS. *those . . . those;* alt. to *these . . . those* by Wiat (for the sake of euphony?). D. *both theis at ons in those.*

The Harleian text follows the MS. exactly.

## 14

Desire alas, my master and my foo
So sore alterd thi selff how mayst thou se?
Some tyme I sought that dryvis me to and fro;
Some tyme thow ledst that ledyth the and me. 4
What reson is to rewle thy subiectes so?
By forcyd law and mutabilite?
For where by the I dowtyd to have blame,
Evyn now by hate agayne I dowt the same. 8

(Signed, interlaced initials, "T. V.")

Written and corrected in Wiat's handwriting. Shortened MS. signs are written in full in this text.

1 **master**] This word is represented by a curious sign in the D. MS.

3 **Some tyme I sought . . . fro**] first reading: *Whome I did seke now chasith me to and fro.*

4 **Some tyme . . . me**] first reading: *Whom thou didst reule now rewlyth the and me.*

5 **What reson . . . so**] first reading: *Tyrant it is to rewle thy subjectes so.*

The version in D. differs considerably; it is given entire—

Cruell desire my master and my foo,
Thy self so chaingid. for shame how maist thou see.
Whom I have sought dothe chase me to and froo:
Whom thou didst rule nowe rulith the and me:
What right is to rule thy subjectes soo?
And to be ruled by mutability?
Lo wherebye the I doubted to have blame,
Even now bye dred againe I doubt the same.

## 15

Venemus thornes that ar so sharp and kene,
Sometyme ber flowers fayre and fresh of hue:
Poyson offtyme is put in medecene,
And causith helth in man for to renue; 4
Ffire that purgith allthing that is unclene,
May hele and hurt: and if thes bene true,
I trust somtyme my harme may be my helth:
Syns evry wo is joynid with some welth. 8

(Signed, interlaced initials, "T. V.")

Written in Wiat's handwriting with no corrections.

It presents a typical case of the alteration of Wiat's text, for it is found in D, P, Harl., and in Tottel. See below.

1 **thornes**] $T_2$. *thrones* (corrupt).

**ar so**] P. *be both.*

2 **Sometyme . . . hue**] P. *bear sometimes . . . hue.* T. *beur flowers we se full fresh and faire of hue.*

3 **Poyson offtyme is**] P. *and poison oft is.* T. *poison is also.* D. *poyson oft tymes.*

4 **And causith . . . renue**] D. *and to his helth dothe make the man renue.* T. *and unto man his helth doth oft renue.* Harl. *Which causethe . . . renewe.*

5 **Ffire . . . unclene**] D. *Fyre that allthing consumeth so clene.* P. *The fire eke that all consumeth clene.* T. *The fier that all thinges eke consumeth clene.*

6 **and if thes bene true**] D. *and if this be true.* P. *and yf that this be true.* T. *then if that this be true.* Harl. *And if this be true.*

7 **I trust somtyme . . . helth**] Harln. *I trust my harme to be my health.*

8 **with**] Harl. *to.*

In the D. MS. this poem is marked by Margaret Howard (afterwards the mother of Darnley) as one of her favourites.

## 16

In dowtfull brest, whilst moderly pitie,
With furyous famyn stondyth at debate
Sayth thebrew moder : " O child unhappye
" Retorne thi blowd where thou hadst milk of late; 4
" Yeld me those lyms that I made unto thee,
" And entre there where thou wert generat;
" For of on body agaynst all nature,
" To a nothr must I make sepulture. 8

(Signed, interlaced initials, "T. V.")

Written in Wiat's handwriting.
1 whilst] T. *whiles.*
3 Sayth thebrew moder] T. *the mother sayth.*
6 wert] T. were.
8 To a nothr] T. *to an other.*
must] MS. *I must,* with *I* crossed out.

## 17

Off Cartage he, that worthie warier
Could overcome, but cowld not use his chaunce;
And I, like wise off all my long endever,
The sherpe conquest, tho fortune did avaunce, 4
Could not it use : the hold that is gyvin over
I unpossest : so hangith in balaunce
Off warr my pees, reward of all my payne;
At Mountzon thus I restles rest in Spayne. 8

(Signed, interlaced initials, "T. V.")

In Wiat's handwriting.
1 Off Cartage] T. *of Carthage.*
5 Could not it use] T. *ne could it use.*
gyvin] T. *given.*
At Mountzon thus] first reading *At Mountzon lo,* Wiat's correction.

## 18

I lede a liff unpleasant, nothing glad :
Crye and complaynt offerre voydes Joyfulnesse :
So chaungethe unrest that nought shall fade :
Payne and dyspyse hathe altered plesantnes ; 4
Ago, long synnys that she hathe truly made
Disdayne for trowght, sett lyght yn stedfastnes,
I have cause goode to syng this song :
Playne or reioyse, who felythe wele or wrong. 8

(Signed "Tho.")

2 **voydes**] MS. *voyde*, with *s* added in same ink as the signature "Tho."
This poem is found only in the E. MS.

## 19

From thes hye hilles as when a spryng doth fall.
It tryllyth downe with still and suttyll corse :
Off this and that it gaders ay, and shall,
Iyll it have just off flowd the streme, and forse, 4
Then at the fote it ragith over all ;
So faryth love when he hath tan a sorse ;
His rayne is rage, resistans valyth none ;
The first estew is remedy alone. 8

(Signed, interlaced initials, "T. V.")

Written and revised in Wiat's hand.
2 **still**] first reading *small*.
3 **it gaders ay**] first reading *and gad* (alt. to *it gaders*) *still*.
4 **off flowd the streme**] T. *down flowed to streame*.
7 **His rayne . . . none**] T. *Rage is his raine, Resistance vayleth none*.
7–8 first reading of MS. : *His rayne is rage then botyth no deny*
*The first estew is only remedy*.

## 20

Tagus, fare well, that westward with thy stremis,
Torns up the grayns of gold alredy tryd :
With spurr and sayle for I go seke the Temis,
Gaynward the sonne that showth her welthi pryd : 4
And to the town which Brutus sowght by dremis.
Like bendyd mone doth lend her lusty syd;
My Kyng my Contry alone for whome I lyve :
Of myghty love the winges for this me gyve. 8

(Signed, interlaced initials, "T. V.")

Written in Wiat's hand.
3 **With spurr . . . I**] T. *for I with spurre and saile.*
**Temis**] MS. *temis.*
6 **doth lend**] T. *that leanes.*
7 **My Kyng . . . lyve**] first reading, *My Kyng my Contry for whome only alone.* T. *My king, my country I seke for whom I live.*
8 **Of myghty love . . . gyve**] T. *O mighty Jove the windes for this me geve.*

## 21

Off purpos Love chase first for to be blynd;
For he with syght of that that I behold,
Vanquisht had bene against all godly kynd;
His bow, your hand, and trusse shold have unfold : 4
And he with me to serve had bene assind.
But, for he blind and rekelesse wold him hold,
And still by chaunse his dedly strokes bestow,
With such as see I serve and suffer wow. 8

(Signed, interlaced initials, "T. V."

Written in Wiat's hand.
2 **For he . . . behold**] first reading *for yff he might have sene that I behold.*
4 **His bow, your hand**] MS. *your hand his bow* alt. as in text by Wiat.
**he blind and**] MS. *bycawse he* alt. by Wiat.

## 22

Vulcane bygat me : Mynerva me taught
Nature, my mother : craft norischt me yere by yere
Thre bodyes ar my fode : my strengh is in naught :
Angre, wrath, wast, and noyse are my children dere 4
Gesse frend what I ame and how I ame wrought :
Monstere of see or of lande or of els where ?
Know me and use me and I may the defend
And if I be thine enmye, I may thy life ende. 8

This Epigram is copied into the Egerton later, in the hand of one of the correctors of the MS. It is in the Harl. MS. entitled "A Ridell. Tho. W."

2 **by**] cut off from the margin of the MS.
3 **in naught**] Harl. omits *in* (a better version).
4 **Angre**] Harl. *slawghter.*
5 **and how**] Harl. *or how.*
7 **Know**] Harln. *have.*

## 23

All yn thi sight my lif doth hole depende ;
Thou hidist thyself and I must dye therfore ;
But sins thou maiste so easely save thy frende,
Why dost thou styk to salv that thou madist sore ? 4
Whye doo I dye sins thou maist me deffende ?
For if I dye, then maiste thou lyve no more :
Sins ton bye tothr doth lyve and fede thy herte,
I with thye sight, thou also with my smerte. 8

In the D. MS., fol. 69a, and in Tottel.

1 **thi sight**] T. *thy loke.*
3 **save thy**] T. *helpe they* (misprint?).
6 **For if . . . then maiste . . . more**] T. *And if . . . thy life may last no more.*
7 **Sins . . . herte**] T. *For ech by other doth live and have relief.*
8 **I . . . smerte**] T, *I in thy loke and thou most in my grief.*

## 24

The fructe of all the servise that I serve
Dispaire doeth repe, such haples hap have I;
But tho he have no powre to make me swarve,
Yet by the fire for colde I fele I dye: 4
In paradis for hunger still I sterve:
And in the flowde for thurste to deth I drye;
So Tantalus ane I and yn worse payne,
Amyds my helpe, and helples doth remayne. 8

(Monogram signature "T. V.")

In the D. MS. only, fol. 72a.

## 25

Within my brest I never thought it gain
Of gentle mynde the fredom for to lose;
Nor in my hart sanck never such disdain
To be a forger, faultes for to disclose; 4
Nor I can not endure the truth to glose:
To set a glosse upon an earnest pain:
Nor I am not in nomber one of those,
That list to blow retrete to every train. 8

In Tottel only.

2 mynde] Reading of 1st ed., Bodleian, Oxford; 2nd ed. (July 1557) and later *myndes.*

4 faultes] 1st ed. *fautlesse* 2nd ed.

## 26

For shamefast harm of great and hatefull nede :
In depe despayre, as did a wretch go,
With ready corde, out of his life to spede :
His stumbling foote did finde an hoorde, lo, 4
Of golde I say : where he preparde this dede;
And in eschange, he left the corde, tho
He that had hidde the golde, and founde it not,
Of that he founde, he shapte his neck a knot. 8

In Tottel only.

## 27

My love ys lyke unto theternall fyre :
And I as those whyche therin do remayn :
Whose grevous payne ys but theyre gret desyre,
To se the syght whyche they may not attayn. 4
So in helles heate my self I fele to be,
That am restraynd, by gret extremyte,
The syght of her whyche ys so dere to me.
O puissant love and power of gret avayle 8
By whome hell may be fellt or dethe assayle.

From the D. MS. f. 53a.

## 28

In court to serve decked with freshe aray,
Of sugred meates felyng the swete repast;
The life in bankets and sundry kindes of play,
Amid the presse of lordly lokes to waste,
Hath with it joynde oft times such bitter taste, 5
That who so ioyes such kinde of life to holde,
In prison ioyes fettred with cheines of gold. 7

From Tottel.

## 29

A face that shuld content me wonders well,
Shuld not be faire but lovelie to behold:
With gladsome cheare all grief for to expell:
With sober lookes so wold I that it should 4
Speake without wordes, such wordes as non can tell;
The tresse also shuld be of crysped gold:
With witt: and thus might chaunce I might be tyde
And knyt agayne the knott that should not slide. 8

From the P. MS., fol. 32b; in Tottel also.
1 wonders] T. *wonderous.*
3 With gladsome cheare] T. *of lively loke.*
expell] T. *repell.*
4 With sober lookes] T. *With right good grace.*
5 wordes] T. *word.*
7 and thus might chaunce] T. *and these perchance.*
8 the knott] T. *with knot.*

## 30

Luckes my faire falcon and your fellowes all,
How well pleasaunt yt were your libertie!
Ye not forsake me that faire might ye befall;
But they that sometyme lykt my companye, 4
Like lyse awaye from ded bodies, thei crall,
Loe what a profe in light adversytie!
But ye my birdes, I swear, by all your belles
Ye be my fryndes, so be but few elles. 8

From the P. MS., fol. 32b; in Tottel also.
1 Luckes . . . and your] T. *Lux . . . and thy.*
3 might ye befall] T. *mought you fall.*
8 so be but] T. *and very.*

## 31

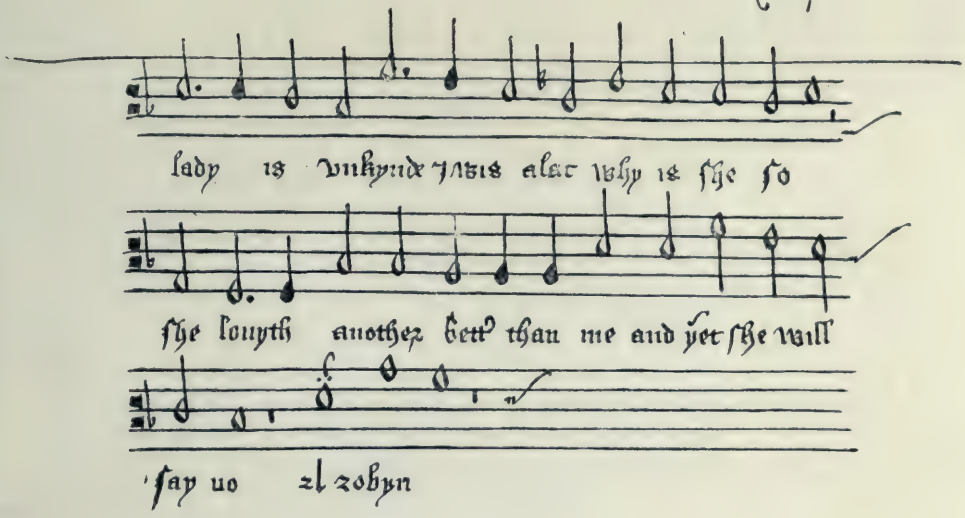
Sighes ar my foode: drynke are my teares
Clynkinge of fetters suche musycke wolde crave:
Stynke and close ayer away my lyf wears:
Innocencie is all the hope I have. 4
Rayne, wynde or wether I judge by myne eares.
Mallice assaulted that rightiousnes should have,
Sure I am Brian, this wounde shall heale agayne,
But yet, alas, the scarre shall styll remayne. 8

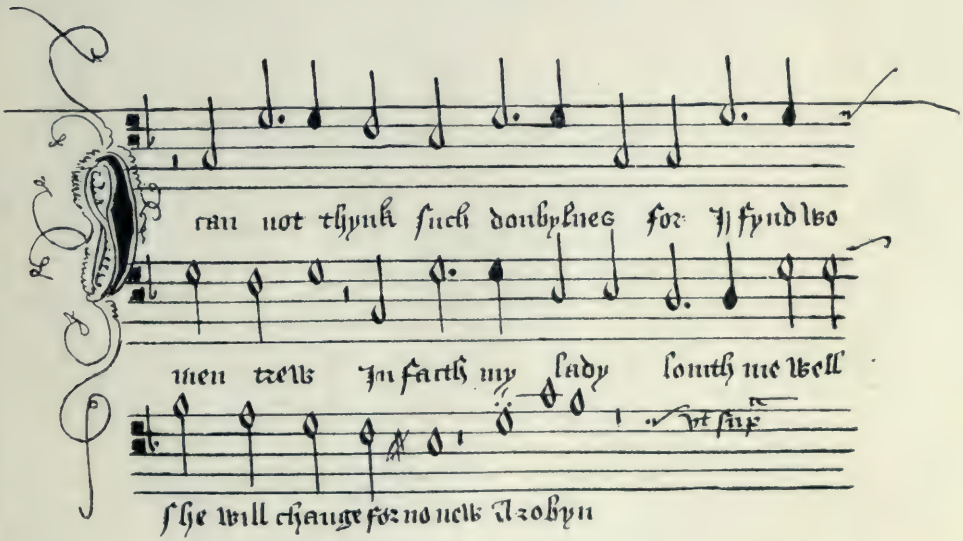
From the Harleian MS., entitled "Tho. W. to Bryan."
1 drynke] T. *my drink.*
2 such . . . crave] T. *would such Musick crave.*
3 wears] T. *it wears.*
4 Innocencie] T. *pore innocence.*
5 I judge] T. *judge I.*
6 assaulted] T. *assaultes.*
7 Sure I am] T. *sure am I.*

A robyn gentyl robyn tel me how thy lemman
doth and thou shal know off myne A robyn gentil
robyn gentyl thy lemman doth and thou shal
know off myne

A robyn gentil robyn tel me how
thy lemman doth and thou shalt know of myne my

Why


lady is vnkynde Alas alas why is she so
she louyth another bett' than me and yet she will
say no al zobyn


can not thynk such doubylnes for I fynd so
men tells In farth my lady louyth me well
she will change for no nelw Azobyn

Lozuysh

# MISCELLANEOUS POEMS

## 1528–1536

### I

(1)

Alas the greiff and dedly wofull smert :
The carefull chaunce shapen afore my shert;
The sorrowfull teares, the sighes hote as fyer,
That cruell love hath long soked from myn hert.
And for reward of our greate desire
Disdaynful dowblenes have I for my hier. 6

(2)

O lost servis, O payn ill rewarded :
O pitifull hert with payn enlarged :
O faithfull mynde, too sodenly assented :
Retourn, alas sithens thou are not regarded : 10
Too great a prouf of true faith presented,
Causeth by right suche faith to be repented. 12

1 **greiff**] corrected later to *greefe*. See Sonnet 4, l. 10, for same alteration.
3 **teares**] MS. *teres*, with *a* inserted (scribe's hand). Wiat's spelling *teres*.
**fyer**] alt. in MS. to (1) *fyere*; (2) overwritten *fyer* (later hand).
5 **reward**] first spelling *rewerd*, alt. by scribe.
**our**] MS. *Or*; corrected later hand.
11 **prouf**] alt. (later hand) to *proofe*.
12 **suche**] *e* crossed out in MS.
**be**] a second *e* added (later hand).
The D. MS. contains the last three stanzas, fol. 2b. Absent from Tottel.

(3)

O cruell causer of undeserved chaunge,
By greet desire unconstantly to raunge :
Is this your waye for prouf of stedfastnes?
(Perdy you knowe the thing was not so straunge 16
By former prouff) too muche my faithfulnes;
What nedeth then suche coloured dowblenes? 18

(4)

I have wailed thus, weping in nyghtly payn :
In sobbes and sighes, Alas! and all in vayn :
In inward plaint and hertes wofull torment :
And yet, alas, lo crueltie and disdayn 22
Have set at noght a faithfull true intent,
And price hath privilege trouth to prevent. 24

(5)

But though I sterve : and to my deth still morne :
And pece mele in peces though I be torn :
And though I dye yelding my weried gooste
Shall never thing again make me retorn. 28
I qwite the entreprise of that that I have lost,
To whome so ever lust for to proffer moost. 30

15 prouf] alt. to *proofe* (later hand); the original spelling is left in l. 17, where the word has a second final *f*.

16 you knowe] D. *I know*.

24 trouth] *u* crossed out in MS. (later hand?).

27 dye] *e* crossed out in MS.
yelding] a second *e* inserted (later hand).
gooste] second *o* crossed out in MS.

29 that I have lost] a blank space left in the D. MS., and these words inserted in Margaret Howard's handwriting.

30 lust] D. *list*.

A leaf or two is here lost from the MS., and the page following contains the last few lines of a poem.

## 2

O restfull place : reneewer of my smart :
O laboors salve : encreasing my sorowe :
O bodyes ease : O troobler of my hart;
Peaser of mynde : of myne unquyet fo : 4
Refuge of payene : remembrer of my wo :
Of care coomefort : where I dispayer my part;
The place of slepe : wherin I doo but wake.
Bysprent with teares, my bedde I thee forsake. 8

This poem was probably inserted late; it is in the hand of one the correctors of the MS., possibly the handwriting of John Harington. See Commentary.

It is specially interesting for the spelling, which is quite different from that of the scribe or of Wiat; cf. *reneewer* (1), *laboors* (2), *troobler* (3), *coomefort* (6), *doo* (7), and *thee* (8)—spelling betokening the hand of the *corrector* of the MS.

## 3

(1)

The restfull place, revyver of my smarte :
The labors salve, incressyng my sorow :
The bodys ese, and trobler off my hart :
Quieter of mynd, and my unquyet foo :
Fforgetter of payn, remembryng my woo : 5
The place of slepe, wherin I do but wake
Be sprent with teres, my bed, I the forsake. 7

(2)

The frost, the snow, may not redresse my hete :
Nor yet no heate abate my fervent cold :
I know nothyng to ese my paynes mete :
Eche care cawsythe increse by twenty fold :
Revyvyng carys upon my sorows old, 12
Suche overthwart affectes they do me make :
By sprent with terys my bed for to forsake. 14

(3)

Yet helpythe yt not : I fynd no better ese
In bed or owt; thys moste cawsythe my payn :
Where most I seke how beste that I may plese,
My lost labor, alas, ys all in vayn :
Yet that I gave I cannot call agayn : 19
No place fro me my greffe away can take
Wherefore with terys my bed I the forsake. 21

This poem, as the possible first draft of No. 2, is inserted here from the D. MS. At the foot of the poem are the words "ffynys q^d Wyatt."

8 hete] the spelling varies, not *heate*, next line.

11 twenty fold] written in MS. *XX^ty fold*

## 4

### Love's Arraignment *

(1)

Myne olde dere en'my, my froward master,
Afore that Quene, I caused to be acited;
Whiche holdeth the divine parte of nature:
That lyke as goolde, in fyre he mought be tryed.
Changed with dolour, theare I me presented 5
With horrible feare, as one that greatlye dreadith
A wrongfull death, and justice alwaye seekethe. 7

(2)

And thus I sayde: "once my lefte foote Madame,
When I was yonge I sett within his reigne;
Whearbye other than fierlye burninge flame,
I never felt but many a greevous payne;
Tourment I suffred, angre, and disdayne, 12
That myne oppressed patience was past,
And I myne owne life hated at the last. 14

(3)

Thus hytherto have I my time passed
In payne and smarte. What wayes proffitable:
How many pleasant dayes have me escaped;
In serving this false lyer so deceavable?
What witt have wordes so pressed and forceable, 19
That may contayne my great myshappynesse,
And just complayntes of his ungentlenesse? 21

* The first three stanzas missing from the MS. owing to a lost leaf; it has therefore been necessary to follow the A. version, which is not dependable.

3 nature] T. *our nature.*

(4)

*O ! small hony, much aloes, and gall :
In bitternes have my blynde lyfe taisted
His fals swetenes, that torneth as a ball,
With the amourous dawnce have made me traced;
And where I had my thought, and mynde ataced, 26
From all erthely frailnes, and vain pleasur,
He toke me from rest and set me in error. 28

(5)

He hath made me regarde God muche lesse then I ought
And to my self to take right litle heede,
And, for a Woman, have I set at nought
All othr thoughtes : in this onely to spede;
And he was onely counceillor of this dede; 33
Alwayes whetting my youthely desyer
On the cruell whetstone tempered with fier. 35

* The E. text begins here and continues to the end. Notice the difference between the authoritative text and the A. MS. and Tottel.

22 O small] A, T. *so small.*
23 have . . . taisted] A, T. *my blynde life hath ytasted.*
24 fals swetenes] A, T. *fals semblance.*
25 With . . . traced] A, T. *with fair and amorous dance made me be traced.*
26 ataced] A, T. *araced.*
27 From all] A, T. omit *all.*
vain] A, T. *from vayne.*
28 He . . . error] A, T. *Me from my rest he toke and set in errour.*
29 He . . . lesse] A, T. *God made he me regard lesse.*
30 right] A, omits.
33 counceillor] original MS. spelling. A later hand has crossed out *i* and the first *l*.
34 Alwayes whetting] tr. A, T.
desyer] alt. to *desier.* A, T. *fraile desire.*
35 the] A, T. omit.

(6)

But alas where now had I ever wit?
Or els any othr gift geven me of nature?
That souner shall chaunge my weryed sprite,
Then the obstinate will that is my rueler?
So robbed my libertie with displeasure 40
This wicked traytor, whom I thus accuse,
That bitter liffe have torned me in pleasaunt use. 42

(7)

He hath chased me thorough dyvers regions;
Thorough desert wodes, and sherp high mountaignes,
Thorough froward people and straite pressions:
Thorough rocky sees: over hilles and playnes:
With wery travaill, and labourous paynes: 47
Alwayes in trouble and in tediousnes,
In all errour and daungerous distres. 49

(8)

But nother he nor she my tothr ffoo,
For all my flyght did ever me forsake;
That though tymely deth hath ben to sloo,

36 But alas where now] MS. spelling *butt helas* altered as in text. A, T. *but O alas where.*
37 Or els any othr] A. *or other.* T. *or other.*
geven me] T. *geven to me.*
38 shall chaunge] A. *shall be chaunged.* T. *shalbe changed.*
sprite] one of the few instances where *spirite* has the force of two syllables.
40 my libertie] A, T. *he my freedome.*
42 me] A, T. omit.
43 chased me] A, T. *me hasted.*
45 straite pressions] A, T. *bitter passions.*
46 over] A, T. *and over.*
47 and labourous] A, T. *and with labourous.*
49 In all] A, T. *all in.*
52 tymely] A, T. *my tymely.*
sloo] MS. spelling, second *o* crossed out (later).

That as yet it hath me not overtake;
The hevynly goodenes of pitie do it slake. 54
And note this, his cruell extreme tyranny,
That fedeth hym with my care and mysery. 56

(9)

Syns I was his: owre rested I never,
Nor loke for to do; and eke the waky nyghtes,
The bannysshed slepe, may no wyse recover.
By decepte, and by force, over my sprites,
He is rueler; and syns there never bell strikes 61
Where I ame, that I here not, my playntes to renewe,
And he himself he knoweth that I say is true. 63

(10)

Ffor never wormes have an old stock eaten,
As he my hert, wher he is alwaye resident;
And doeth the same with deth daely thretyn;

53 **as yet**] A, T. *me as yet.*

54 **The hevynly goodenes**] the MS. is altered to *Goddes* (for *goddess*), and finally to *Goddz;* the original spelling is given as translating the Italian (see Commentary). A. *The heavenlye Gods.* T. *The heavenly Goddes.*

**slake**] scribal spelling *shake*, with *l* written above *h*. A later hand has written *slake* in the margin.

55 **And note . . . tyranny**] A, T. *and note they this his cruell tyrannye.*

56 **fedeth**] A, T. *fedes.* MS. alt. to *feedeth* (later).

58 **for**] A, T. *omit.*

59 **no wyse**] A, T. *in no wise.*

60 **By decepte . . . sprites**] A, T. *by guile and force over my thralled sprites.*

61 **and syns . . . strikes**] A, T. *since which bel never strikes.*

62 **Where . . . renewe**] A, T. *That I heare not as sounding to renewe.*

63 **And . . . is true**] A, T. *My plaintes: Himself he knowes* (A.), *knoweth* (T.), *that I say true.*

**that**] *that* repeated and crossed out by scribe in the text.

64 **have . . . eaten**] A, T. *old rotten stocke have eaten.*

**old**] final *e* added to text (later hand).

65 **alwaye**] A, T. omit.

*Thens come the teres, and the bitter torment,
The sighes, the wordes, and eke the languisshement, 68
That annoye boeth me and peradeventure othr;
Judge thou that knowest thone and thothr. 70

(11)

Myn adversary, with grevous reprouff,
Thus he began: "Here, Lady, thothr part:
"That the plain trueth from which he draweth alowff,
This unkynd man shall shew, ere that I part,
In yonge age I toke him from that art 75
That selleth wordes, and maketh a clattering knyght,
And of my welth I gave him the delight. 77

(12)

Nowe, shameth he not on me for to complain,
That held him evermore in pleasaunt game
From his desire, that myght have been his payne;

* *Note.*—There are spelling corrections on this page in the MS. in the hand that copied the poem "O restfull place," fol. 7b.

67 **and the bitter**] A, T. *and thence the bitter.*

69 **annoye**] A, T. *noye.*

70 **thone and thothr**] A, T. *the one and eke the t'other* (A.), *tother* (T.).

71 **adversary, with grevous**] A, T. *adversair with such grevous.*
**reprouff**] MS. alt. to *reproofe* (later hand).

72 **Here, Lady, thothr part**] MS. corrected to *Heare Lady the* (later hand) *other part.*

73 **alowff**] MS. spelling *aloffe* alt. by scribe as text.

74 **This . . . shall shew**] A. *thus . . . may shew.* T. *This . . . may shew.*
**ere**] MS. *here,* with *h* crossed out by scribe.

75 **In yonge**] A, T. *in his yonge.*

76 **maketh**] A. T. makes.

77 **the delight**] A. *my delight.*

78 **shameth**] A, T. *shames.*
**for**] inserted in MS. by scribe.

79 **game**] A. *gayne.* The A. MS. version ends here.

Yet onely thereby I broght him to some frame :
Which, as wretchednes, he doth greately blame ; 82
And towerd honor I quickened his wit :
Where els, as a daskard, he might have sitt. 84

(13)

He knoweth : that Atrides, that made Troye frete :
And Hannyball, to Rome so trobelous :
Whome Homere honoured, Achilles that grete :
And the Affricane Scipion the famous :
And many other, by much vertue glorious 89
Whose fame and honor did bryng them above,
I did let fall, in base dishonest love. 91

(14)

And unto him, though he no dele worthy ware,
I chose right the best of many à mylion :
That under the mone was never her pere

81 **onely thereby**] T. *therby alone.*

**frame**] scribe's spelling in MS. (1) *frayne*, copying *payne* in line above, alt. (same hand) as in text.

82 **Which . . . blame**] *doth* inserted by scribe. T. *Which now as wretchednes he doth so blame.*

83 **I quickened**] T. *quickned I.*

84 **Where . . . daskard**] T. *Where : as a daskard else.*

85 **that Atrides**] T. *how grete Atride.*

88 **the Affricane**] T. *Thrafficane.*

89 **vertue**] $T_1$. *nerture.* $T_2$. *honour.*

90 **Whose fame and honor did bryng them above**] $T_2$. *whose fame and actes did lift them up above.* $T_1$. as in text.

92 **no dele worthy**] T. *unworthy* (omits *no dele*).

93 **right**] T. omits.

**à**] accented in the MS. ; cf. *lo suche à maistres*, Rond. 2, 12.

94 **the mone . . . pere**] MS. spelling alt. to *moone* (later hand). T. *und onne yet never was her pere.*

Of wisdome, womanhede and discretion;
And of my grace I gave her suche a façon, 96
And eke suche a way I taught her for to teche
That never base thought his hert myght have reche. 98

(15)

Evermore thus to content his maistres,
That was his onely frame of honestie.
I sterred him still towerd gentilnes,
And caused him to regard fidelitie;
Patiens I taught him in adversite; 103
Suche vertues he lerned in my great schole
Whereof he repenteth, the ignoraunt ffole. 105

(16)

These were the deceptes and the bitter gall
That I have used; the torment and the anger;
Sweter then for to in joye eny othr in all.
Of right goode seede ill fruyte I gather;
And so hath he, that thunkynd doeth forther. 110

95 discretion] T. *of discretion.*
96 suche] final *e* crossed out later.
97 a way] T. *way.*
98 myght have reche] T. *so hye might reche.*
104 he lerned] T. *learned he.*
schole] MS. alt. to *schoole* (later).
105 Whereof he repenteth] T. *whereof repenteth now.*
ffole] MS. alt. to *foole* (later).
106 the deceptes] T. *the same deceites.*
and the] T. omits *the.*
108 for to injoye eny othr in all] T. *ever dyd to other fall.*
109 fruyte I gather] T. *frute los thus I gather.*
110 hath] T. *shall.*
thunkynd] T. *the unkinde.*

I norisshe a serpent under my wyng,
And of his nature now gynneth he to styng. 112

(17)

And for to tell at last my great servise :
From thousand dishonestes I have him drawen;
That by my means in no maner of wyse,
Never vile pleasur him hath overthrowen;
Where in his dede, shame hath him alwaies ynawen, 117
Dowbting reporte, that should com to her eare;
Whome now he accuseth he wounted to fere. 119

(18)

What soever he hath of any honest custume
Of her and me, that holdeth he every wit :
But lo, there was never nyghtely fantorme
So ferr in errour, as he is from his wit :
To plain on us; He stryveth with the bit 124

Corrections in the MS. : l. 111, *under* alt. from *unger* (scribal error).

*Variants.*

111 I . . . serpent under] *unger*, scribal error for *under*, alt. as text (later hand) T. *A serpent nourish I.*
112 And of his nature now] T. *And now of nature.*
114 dishonestes I have] T. *dishonesties have I.*
115 in no . . . wyse] T. *him in no maner wyse.*
116 him] T. *once.*
117 ynawen] T. *gnawen.*
118 reporte] later hand *reporte.*
should com] alt. (later hand) to *shoolde cume* ; cf. spelling *would*, l. 129.
119 accuseth he wounted] T. *blames, her wonted.*
fere] alt. to *feare* (later hand).
120 soever] T. *ever.*
121 holdeth] T. *holdes.*
122 there was never] T. *yet never was there.*

Which may ruell him, and do him pleasur and payn
And in oon oure make all his grief remayn. 126

(19)

But oon thing there is above all othr :
I gave him winges, wherwith for to flye
To honor and fame : and if he would farther
Then mortall thinges, above the starry sky;
Considering the pleasur that an Iye 131
Myght geve in erthe, by reason of his love,
What shuld that be that lasteth still above? 133

(20)

And he the same himself hath sayed, or this :
But now forgotten is boeth that, and I,
That gave her him, his onely welth and blisse."
And at this worde, with dedly shright and cry :
" Thou gave her me," qwod I, " but by and by" 138

Corrections in the MS. : l. 126, *oon* alt. to *one*. *oon* is the general form in this MS. (see l. 127).

*Variants.*

125 **pleasur**] T. *ease*.
126 **And in oon oure . . . remayn**] T. *And in one hower make all his grief his gayn*.
**oon**] MS. alt. to *one* later.
**oure**] MS. spelling *owre*, l. 57.
**grief remayn**] MS. spelling alt. to *greefe remayn* (later hand).
127 **there is**] T. *yet there is*.
128 **I gave . . . flye**] T. *I gave . . . he might up flie*. This line is scarcely decipherable in the MS., owing to a later use being made of this page for mathematical exercises.
129 **farther**] T. *to higher*.
132 **his love**] T. *the love*.
134 **or**] for *ere*. T. *ere*.
137 **shright**] T. *shreke*.
138 **Thou gave her me**] T. *thou gave her once*.

" Thou toke her streight from me : that wo worth thee ! "
" Not I " quoth he ; " but price, that is well worth."140

(21)

At last : boeth eche for himself concluded :
I, trembling : but he, with small reverence :
" Lo thus as we have nowe eche othr accused,
" Dere lady, we wayt onely thy sentence."
She smyling : " After thissaid audience 145
" It liketh me," quod she, " to have herd your question
" But lenger tyme doeth aske resolution." 147

139 **streight**] T. *ayen.*
140 **Not I, quoth he, but price that is well worth**] T. *Not I but price: more worth than thou, quod he.*
141 **boeth eche for himself**] T. *eche other for himself.*
142 **trembling**] T. *trembling still.*
143 **have nowe eche othr**] T. *eche other have.*
144 **we wayt onely thy sentence**] T. *now we wayte thyne onely sentence.*
145 **She smyling : After thissaid**] T. *she smiling, at the whisted.*
146 **your**] MS. *yor*, so with *honor—hono*, with abbreviation sign of vowel and *r*.
147 **aske resolution**] T. *ask a resolucion.*

5

(1)

Farewell, the rayn of crueltie :
Though that with pain my libertie
Dere have I boght : yet shall suretie
Conduyt my thoght of Joyes nede. 4

(2)

Of force I must forsake pleasure :
A goode cause iust syns I endure
Thereby my woo : which be ye sure
Shall therewith goo me to recure. 8

(3)

I fare as oon escaped that fleith :
Glad that is gone, yet stille fereth
Spied to be cawght : and so dredeth
That he for nought his pain leseth. 12

(4)

In joyfull pain reioyse myn hert
Thus to sustain of eche apart;
Let not this song from the estert;
Welcome emong my plaisaunt smert. 16

1 **rayn**] T. *hart.*
3 **yet shall suretie**] T. *and wofully.*
4 **Conduyt . . . Joyes nede**] T. *finishd my fearful tragedy.*
5 **pleasure**] T. *such pleasure.*
10 **Glad that is gone yet stille fereth**] T. *Glad he is gone and yet styll fereth.*

## 6

It may be good, like it who list,
But I do dowbt who can me blame:
For oft assured, yet have I myst,
And now again I fere the same;
The wyndy wordes, the Ies quaynt game, 5
Of soden chaunge maketh me agast;
For dred to fall I stond not fast. 7

Alas I tred an endles maze
That seketh to accorde two contraries;
And hope still and nothing hase
Imprisoned in libertes;
As oon unhard, and still that cries: 12
Alwaies thursty, and yet nothing I tast;
For dred to fall I stond not fast. 14

Assured, I dowbt I be not sure;
And should I trust to suche suretie,
That oft hath put the prouff in ure,
And never hath founde it trusty?
Nay Sir in faith it were great foly. 19
And yet my liff thus I do wast,
For dred to fall I stond not fast. 21

(Signed "Wyat.")

5 **The wyndy . . . game**] T. alters this line entirely to *The wordes that from your mouth last came.*
6 **maketh**] T. *make.*
9 **to accorde**] T. *taccord.*
10 **still**] T. *thus still.*
13 **yet nothing I tast**] T. *nought doth taste.*
16 **And should I trust to**] T. *Should I then trust unto.*
17 **hath**] T. *have.*
18 **never hath**] T. *never yet have.*
20 **thus I do**] T. *thus do I.*

## 7

Resound my voyse; ye wodes that here me plain:
Boeth hilles and vales causing reflexion;
And Ryvers eke record ye of my pain:
Which have ye oft forced by compassion,
As Judges to here myn exclamation: 5
Emong whome pitie I fynde doeth remayn:
Where I it seke, Alas there is disdain. 7

Oft ye Revers: to here my wofull sounde
Have stopt your course: and plainly to expresse
Many a tere by moystor of the grounde,
The erth hath wept to here my hevenes:
Which causeles to suffre without redresse, 12
The howyy okes have rored in the wynde:
Eche thing methought complayning in their kynde. 14

Why then helas doeth not she on me rew?
Or is her hert so herd, that no pitie
May in it synke my Joye for to renew?

1 here] D. *hereth.*
2 causing] D. *causers of.*
4 ye oft forced] T. *oft forced ye.*
5 to here] T. *lo to here.*
6 pitie I fynde] D. *I fynde pitie.* $T_1$. *such (I fynde) yet.* $T_2$. *ruth (I fynde) yet.*
7 seke] D. *sought.*
12 to suffre] T. *I endure.*
14 complayning in their] D. *moving in the.*
17 Joye] D. *Joyes.*

O stony hert, ho hath this joyned the?
So cruell, that art: cloked with beaultie; 19
No grace to me from the there may procede,
But as rewarded deth for to be my mede. 21

(Signed "Wyat.")

18 **O stony . . . joyned the**] D. *tygres . . . so clokid the.* T. *O stony . . . framed thee.*
19 **So cruell . . . beaultie**] D. *that arte so cruell coverd with bewtye.* T. *so cruel ?*
20 **No grace . . . procede**] D. *There is no grace from the that maye procede.* T. *That from thee may no grace to me procede.*
21 **rewarded**] D, T. *rewarde.*

The following page, fol. 18, is torn away; a portion remains containing Wiat's signature "Tho."

## 8

(1)

In faith I wot not well what to say,
Thy chaunces ben so wonderous;
Thou Fortune, with thy dyvers play,
That causeth joyfull dolours;
And eke the same right joyus; 5
Yet though thy chayn hathe me enwrapt,
Spite of thy hap, hap hath well hapt! 7

(2)

Though thou me set for a wounder,
And sekest thy chaunge to do me payn;
Mens mynd yet may thou not order:
And honeste, and it remayne,
Shall shyne for all thy clowdy rayn; 12
In vayn thou sekest to have trapped,
Spite of thy hap, hap hath well happed! 14

1 well] T. omits.
4 causeth . . . dolours] T. *makst the joyful dolourous.*
8 me set] T. *hast set me.*
9 thy chaunge] T. *by change.*
10 mynd . . . may . . . order] T. *mindes . . . mayest . . . so order.*
11 And honestie and] T. *for honestie if.*
13 have trapped] T. *have me trapt.*

(3)

In hindering thou diddest fourther,
  And made a gap where was a stile;
Cruell willes ben oft put under;
  Wenyng to lowre thou diddist smyle.
  Lorde! how thy self thou diddist begile, 19
That in thy cares wouldest me have lapped!
But spite of thy hap, hap hath well happed! 21

(Signed "Tho.")

15 **In hindering . . . fourther**] T. *In hindering me, me didst thou further.*
18 **thou diddist smyle**] T. *then didst thou smile.*
20 **lapped**] T. *wrapt.*
21 A third *hap* written and crossed out; scribal error.
**thy**] $T_2$. omits.

## 9

Madame withouten many wordes
Ons, I am sure, ye will or no :
And if ye will, then leve your bordes
  And use your wit, and shew it so : 4
And with a beck ye shall me call;
  And if of oon that burneth alwaye
Ye have any pitie at all,
  Aunswer him faire with ye or nay. 8
If it be ye, I shalbe fayne :
  If it be nay, frendes as before;
Ye shall an othr man obtain
  And I myn owne and youres no more. 12

2 ye] T. *you.*
3 ye] T. *you.*
5 And] T. *for.*
  ye] T. *you.*
6 burneth] T. *burns.*
7 any pitie] T. *pity or ruth.*
8 ye or nay] MS. has a sign for *ye.* So also following line *be ye.*
11 Ye] T. *you.*

Below this douzaine, in the MS. is the "Aunswer," in a different, and later, hand. There is no authority for placing it in the text as Wiat's, I have therefore inserted it here.

*Aunswer*

Of few wourdes sr you seme to be,
And wher i doutyd what i woulde doo,
Your quik request hathe causyd me,
  Quikly to tell you what you shawl trust too; 4
For he that wyl be cawlyd wythe a bek,
  Makes haste sute on lyght desier;
Is ever redi to th chek,
  And burnythe in no wastynge fyer. 8
Therfor whyther you be lywe or lothe;
  And whyther it grive you lyght or soer,
I am at a poynt I have made a othe
  Content you wythe nay, for you get no moer. 12

The spelling betrays it as neither Wiat's nor that of his scribes. It is generally ascribed to a lady.

9 lywe] *lief.*

## 10

(1)

Suche happe as I ame happed in,
Had never man of trueth I wene;
At me fortune list to begyn,
To shew that never hath ben sene,
A new kynde of unhappenes; 5
Nor I cannot the thing I mene
Myself expres. 7

(2)

Myself expresse my dedely pain
That can I well, if that myght serve;
But when I have not helpe again
That knowe I not, unles I starve;
For honger still a myddes my foode 12
Is so graunted that I deserve
To do me good. 14

(3)

To do me good what may prevaill,
For I deserve and not desir,
And still of cold I me bewaill
And raked ame in burnyng fyer;
For tho I have, suche is my lott,— 19
In hand to helpe that I require,
It helpeth not. 21

13 This line is almost obscured by mathematic writing.

(4)

It helpeth not, but to encrese
  That, that by prouff can be no more :
  That is the hete that cannot cesse,
And that I have to crave so sore;
What wonder is this gredy lust 26
  To aske and have, and yet therefore
    Refrain I must? 28

(5)

Refrain I must! What is the cause?
  Sure as they say "So hawkes be taught."
  But in my case laieth no suche clause,
For with suche craft I ame not caught :
Wherefore I say and good cause why, 33
  With haples hand, no man hath raught
    Suche happe as I. 35

(Signed "Tho.")

## 11

(1)

They fle from me, that sometyme did me seke
With naked fote, stalking in my chambr.
I have sene theim gentill, tame, and meke,
That now are wyld, and do not remembr
That sometyme they put theimself in daunger 5
To take bred at my hand; and nowe they raunge
Besely seking with a continuell chaunge. 7

(2)

Thancked be fortune it hath ben othrewise
Twenty tymes better; but ons, in speciall,
In thyn arraye, after a pleasaunt gyse,
When her lose gowne from her shoulders did fall,
And she me caught in her armes long and small, 12
Therewith all swetely did me kysse
And softely saide: "Dere hert howe like you this?" 14

2 **stalking in**] T. *stalking within.*
3 **gentill**] D. *boeth gentill*, the line scans with initial strong accent. T, *Once have I seen them.*
4 **remembr**] T. *once remember.*
5 **they put theimself**] T. *they have put them selves.*
7 **with a**] T. *in*; D. omits.
9 **in speciall**] D. *in especiall.* T. *especiall.*
11 **from . . . did**] T. *did from.*
13 **Therewithall . . . did**] D. *but therewithall . . . she did.* T. *And therewithall so swetely did me kysse.*

(3)

It was no dreme : I lay brode waking
But all is torned, thorough my gentilnes,
Into a straunge fasshion of forsaking;
And I have leve to goo of her goodenes :
And she also to use new fangilnes; 19
But syns that I so kyndely am served,
I wold fain knowe what she hath deserved. 21

(Signed "Tho.")

15 **I lay**] D, T. *for I lay.*
16 **torned**] T. *torned now.*
17 **straunge**] T. *bitter.*
18 **to goo**] D. *to parte.*
19 **also**] D. *likewise.*
20 **so kyndely am served**] D. *so gentelly am servid.* T. *unkyndly so am served.*
21 **I wold . . . deserved**] D. *What think you by this that she hath deserved.* T. *How like you this, what hath she now deserved?*

## 12

(1)

There was never nothing more me payned,
Nor nothing more me moved,
As when my swetehert her complayned,
That ever she me loved. 4
Alas the while!

(2)

With pituous loke she saide, and sighed:
" Alas what aileth me,
" To love and set my welth so light
" On hym that loveth not me." 8
Alas the while!

(3)

" Was I not well voyde of all pain
" When that nothing me greved?
" And nowe with sorrows I must complain,
" And cannot be releved. 12
Alas the while!

(4)

" My restfull nyghtes and joyfull daies,
" Syns I began to love,
" Be take from me; all thing decayes
" Yet can I not remove." 16
Alas the while!

Found only in E.
11 sorrows] MS. spelling *sorrvous* (scribal error?).

(5)

She wept and wrong her handes withall;
  The teres fell in my nekk;
She torned her face and let it fall,
  Scarsely therewith coulde speke. 20
                Alas the while!

(6)

Her paynes tormented me so sore
  That comfort had I none;
But cursed my fortune more and more
  To se her sobbe and grone; 24
                Alas the while!

(Signed "Tho.")

## 13

(1)

Patience, tho I have not
The thing that I require,
I must of force, God wot,
Forbere my moost desire; 4
For no ways can I fynde
To saile againste the wynde. 6

(2)

Patience, do what they will
To worke me woo or spite;
I shall content me still
To thyncke boeth day and nyte; 10
To thyncke and hold my peace,
Syne there is no redresse. 12

(3)

Patience, withouten blame,
For I offended nought;

The A. MS. includes this poem.

*Variants.*

5 **can I fynde**] alt. from *not I fynde.* A, D. *can I jynde.*
13 **withouten**] A. *without.*

The D. MS. differs considerably.

2 **require**] D. *desyryd.*
4 **my moost desire**] D. *that I requiryd.*
7 **they will**] D. *she wyll.*
10 **boeth day and nyte**] D. *that ons I myght.*

I knowe they knowe the same,
Though they have chaunged their thought. 16
Was ever thought so moved
To hate that it haith loved? 18

(4)

Patience of all my harme
For fortune is my foo;
Patience must be the charme
To hele me of my woo 22
Patience withoute offence
Is a painfull patience. 24

(Signed "Tho.")

15 **I knowe they knowe**] D. *I know she knows.*
16 **they . . . their**] D. *she . . . her.*
18 **To hate that**] D. *to hate where.*
22 **To hele**] D. *to ease.*

This poem is marked as a favourite by Margaret Howard, D. fol. 13a. At the end of the poem is the inscription "fynys q^d Wyatt.'

## 14

(1)

Paciens for my devise;
  Impatiens for your part;
Of contraries, the gyse
Is ever the overthwart: 4
  Paciens for I ame true:
  The contrary for yew. 6

(2)

Paciens, a good cause why:
  You have no cause at all,
Therefore you standeth awry,
Perchaunce sometyme to fall; 10
  Paciens then take him up
  And drynck of paciens cupp. 12

The first eight lines are in A.
4 **Is . . . overthwart**] D. *must nedes be overthwart.*
8 **You have**] D. *Yours hathe.*
9 **Therefore . . . awry**] D. *Trust ne that stondeth awry.*
10 **Perchaunce . . . fall**] D. *Perchaunce maye some tyme fall.*
11–12] D. MS.—

"Patiens then saye and supp
A taste of patiens cupp."

At the head of this poem in the D. MS., fol. 71a, is the inscription—

"Patiens tho I had nott the etc.:" / to her y^t
Saide this patiens was not for her but
y^t the contrarye of myne was most
metiste for her po^rposse."

(See Commentary for explanation.

(3)

Pacience, no force for that,
  But brusshe your gowne again :
Pacience, spurne not therat :
Let no man knowe your payne : 16
  Pacience, evyn at my pleasure,
  When youres is owte of mesure. 18

(4)

Thothr was for me :
  This patience is for you :
Chaunge when ye list let se
For I have taken a new; 22
  Patience, with a good will,
  Is easy to fullfill. 24

14 **But**] D. *yet.*
16 **Let no man knowe**] D. *Let folkes perceyve.*
17 **evyn**] D. omits.
18 **is owte of**] D. *hath no.*
19 **Thothr**] D. *the tothr.*
22 **taken**] D. *tane.*

## 15

(1)

Ye know my herte my ladye dere,
That sins the tyme I was your thrall,
I have bene yours both hole and clere,
Tho my rewarde hath bene but small :
So am I yet and more than all. 5
And ye kno well how I have served.
As yf ye prove, it shall apere 7
Howe well how longe
How faithefulye :
And soffred wrong
How patientlye ! 11
Then sins that I have never swervid
Let not my paines be ondeservid. 13

(2)

Ye know also though ye saye naye
That you alone are my desire;
And you alone it is that maye
Asswage my fervent flaming fire;
Succour me then I you require. 18
Ye know it were a just request,
Sins ye do cause my heat I say. 20
If that I bourne
That ye will warme,

Missing page or pages occur here in the MS.; therefore St. 1 and 2 taken from D. The E. MS. is followed for the text from l. 24 to the end.

12 swervid] MS. spelling, *swarfde*. *swervid* is made to conform to the spelling *ondeservid*, l. 13.

And not to tourne
*All to my harme, 24
Sending suche flame from frosen brest
Against all right for my unrest. 26

(3)

And I know well how frowerdly
Ye have mystaken my true intent,
And hetherto how wrongfully
I have founde cause for to repent.
Butt deth shall ryd me redely, 31
If your hert do not relent;
And I knowe well all this ye knowe, 33
That I and myne,
And all I have,
Ye may assiyne,
To spill or save. 37
Why are ye then so cruel ffoo
Unto your owne that loveth you so? 39

* E. MS. begins here.

26 all right] D. *nature.*

27 frowerdly] D. *scornefully.*

31 Butt . . . redely] D. has omitted this line, inserting line after l. 33.

32 If . . . relent] D. *But if . . . doth not relente.* After *yor* in the MS. there is a space before *hert* for such a word as "cruell," "hard"; later hand writes *that* before *your.*

33 And . . . knowe] D. *Sins I do kno that this ye kno.*

After l. 33 D. has *Ye shall sle me all wilfullye.*

34 That . . . myne] } D. *for me and myne and all I have* (written as one line).
35 And . . . have] }

## 16

(1)

If fansy would favor,
As my deserving shall;
My love, my paramor,
Should love me best of all. 4

(2)

But if I cannot attain
The grace that I desir;
Then may I well complain
My service and my hier. 8

(3)

Ffansy doeth knowe how
To fourther my trew hert;
If fansy myght avowe
With faith to take part. 12

(4)

But fansy is so fraill
And flitting still so fast;
That faith may not prevaill
To helpe me furst nor last. 16

(5)

Ffor fansy at his lust
Doeth rule all but by gesse,
Whereto should I then trust
In trouth or stedfastnes? 20

An incomplete copy of this poem exists in A. f. 45*a*, beginning at St. 3.

*Variants in D.*

10 fourther] D. *furder.*
12 With . . . part] *With faith for to take part.*
13–16] D. omits.

(6)

Yet gladdely would I please
  The fansy of her hert;
That may me onely ease
  And cure my carefull smart. 24

(7)

Therefore, my lady dere
  Set ons your fantasy,
To make som hope appere
  Of stedfastnes, remedy. 28

(8)

Ffor if he be my frend,
  And undertake my woo,
My greif is at an end
  If he continue so. 32

(9)

Elles fansy doeth not ryght,
  As I deserve and shall;
To have you daye and nyght,
  To love me best of all. 36

*Variant in A.*

21 **gladdely**] A. omits.

*Variants in D.*

28 **Of . . . remedy**] D. *Of stedfast remedy.* A. follows E.
34 **As . . . shall**] D. *As deserve and shall.*

## 17

(1)

At moost myschief
I suffre greif
For of relief,
Syns I have none; 4
My lute and I,
Continuelly,
Shall us apply
To sigh and mone. 8

(2)

Nought may prevaill,
To wepe or waill,
Pitie doeth faill,
In you, Alas! 12
Morning or mone,
Complaint or none,
It is all one,
As in thys case. 16

(3)

Ffor crueltie,
Moost that can be,
Hath soveraynte,
Within your hert; 20

Which maketh bare,
All my welfare;
Nought do you care
How sore I smart: 24

(4)

No Tigres hert,
Is so pervert,
Withoute desert
To wreke his Ire; 28
And you me kyll
For my good will,
Lo how I spill
For my desir! 32

(5)

Ther is no love
That can ye move,
And I can prove,
None other way; 36
Therfore I must
Restrain my lust,
Banisshe my trust,
And welth away. 40

At the end of St. 3 are the words "torn the leiff"; the poem continues on the next page.

30 **For my good will**] omitted by scribe, inserted in Wiat's handwriting; early correction.

38–39 **my**] D. *me*.

(6)

For in myschief,
  I suffer greif,
  For of relief,
  Syns I have none, 44
My lute and I
  Continually,
  Shall us apply
  To sigh and mone. 48

(Signed "Tho.")

St. 6. Written in full in D. MS. The first line only in E. MS.
41 For] D. *Thus*.

## 18

(1)

Marvaill no more all tho
The songes I sing do mone,
For other liff then wo
I never proved none. 4

(2)

And in my hert also
Is graven with lettres diepe :
A thousand sighes and mo
A flod of teres to wepe. 8

(3)

How may a man in smart
Fynde matter to rejoyse ?
How may a morning hert
Set forth a pleasaunt voise ? 12

(4)

Play who that can that part :
Nedes must in me appere
How fortune, overthwart,
Doeth cause my morning chere. 16

(5)

Perdy there is no man
If he never sawe sight,
That perfaictly tell can
The nature of the light. 20

6 lettres] abbrev. in the MS. *tres.*
13 that can] D. *can.*
18 never sawe] T. *saue never.*

(6)

Alas how should I then
  That never tasted but sowre;
  But do as I began
Continuelly to lowre. 24

(7)

But yet perchaunce some chaunce,
  May chaunce to chaunge my tune:
  And when suche chaunce doeth chaunce
Then shall I thanck Fortune. 28

(8)

And if I have chaunce,
  Perchaunce ere it be long;
  For such a pleasant chaunce
To syng some pleasant song. 32

(Signed "Tho.")

21 **Alas how should I then**] D. *How shuld I so then.*

22 **tasted**] D, T. *tast.* At the foot of the page is the word "torn."

25 **some chaunce**] T. *from chaunce. such* inserted in later hand as *souch.*

27 **suche chaunce**] T. (*Souch*) *chaunce.*

29 **And . . . chaunce**] *Souch* is inserted in the MS. by the later hand which copied the poem "O restfull place" (fol. 7b), and corrected the Epigram "Alas Madame." Tottel inserts *Souch* in brackets in ll. 27, 29, and 31. D. *And if suche chance do chaunce.*

The poem is inserted in D. in eight-line stanzas, and is marked at the end "Ffynys q^d T. T. Wyatt."

## 19

(1)

Where shall I have at myn owne will
Teres to complain? where shall I fett
Suche sighes that I may sigh my fill,
And then again my plaintes repete? 4

(2)

For tho my plaint shall have none end,
My teres cannot suffice my woo:
To mone my harme have I no frend,
For fortunes frend is myshappes ffoo. 8

(3)

Comfort (God wot) els have I none
But in the wynde to wast my wordes:
Nought moveth you my dedly mone,
But all, you torn it into bordes. 12

(4)

I speke not now to move your hert,
That you should (rue) upon my pain:
The sentence geven may not revert:
I know suche labor were but vayn 16

3 that I] A. *as I.*
4 repete] MS. *to repete,* with *to* crossed out (same hand).
9 God wot] A. *good wote.*
12 but all] T. *but still.*
14 rue] omitted by scribe and inserted in another hand.

(5)

But syns that I for you my dere
Have lost that thing that was my best,
A right small losse it must appere,
To lese thes wordes and all the rest. 20

(6)

But tho they sparkill in the wynde
Yet shall they show your falsed faith,
Which is retorned unto his kynde,
For like to like, the proverbe saieth. 24

(7)

Ffortune and you did me avaunce :
Me thought I swam and could not drowne,
Happiest of all : but my myschaunce
Did lyft me up to throwe me downe. 28

(8)

And you with your owne cruelnes,
Did set your fote upon my neck :
Me and my welfare to oppresse
Withoute offence your hert to wreke. 32

17 **syns that**] *sins for you* (scribal error) alt. to *syns that* by same hand.
22 **your**] A. *this*.
23 **unto**] T. *to*.
29 **your owne cruelnes**] This is the first reading, alt. to *hir of cruelnes*, later hand. A. words omitted and space left between *with* and *cruelnes*. T. *with her, of cruelnesse*.

(9)

Wher are your plaisaunt wordes, alas;
  Where your faith, your stedfastnes?
  There is no more, but all doeth passe
  And I ame left all comfortles. 36

(10)

But forbicause it doeth you greve,
  And al so me, my wretched liff:
  Have here my trouth, shall not releve,
  But deth alone, my very striff. 40

(11)

Therefore farewell my liff, my deth,
  My gayn, my losse, my salve, my sore:
  Farewell also with you, my breth,
  For I ame gone for evermore. 44

(Signed "Tho.")

34 **Where your faith**] later hand inserts *is* after *where*. The line as it stands is characteristic of the poet. A, T. *Where is.*

37 **But forbicause**] MS. alt. to *but syns so muche* (later hand). A, T. *But since so moche.*

39 **Shall not releve**] MS. alt. to *naught shall releve* (later hand). A, T. *nought shall releve.*

40 **very striff**] T. *wretched strife.*

## 20

A Robyn
Joly Robyn
Tell me how thy leman doeth
*Refrain.* And thou shalt knowe of myn. 4

(1)

Pl. My lady is unkynd, perde!
R. Alack whi is she so?
Pl. She loveth an othr better then me,
And yet she will say no. 8

(2)

Response

I fynde no suche doublenes,
I fynde women true,
My lady loveth me dowtles,
And will chaunge for no newe. 12

This lyric is complete in six stanzas on f. 24a–24b (D.) and is signed "ffynys qd," and followed by some letters in another hand. The poem as it stands in the E. MS. omits St. 4; evidently an omission of the scribe, for after the Plaintif (St. 3) comes "Response" followed by St. 5; this is *clearly the Plaintif's argument;* the matter is set right by inserting St. 4 from the D. MS. "Le Plaintif" replies St. 5. A fragment of the lyric also appears, D. f. 22b, with an additional verse followed by Mary Shelton's signature.

In the second and complete version in D. the fourth stanza comes between the third and fourth of the Egerton and is inserted in the text.

The complete version in D. has the introductory "sentence" as follows—

"Hey Robyn Joly Robyn tell me
How thy lady dose and yu shalt know ] of myn"

*Variants of D.*

1 **A Robyn**] $D_1$. *He Robyn.* $D_2$, *Hey Robyn.*
2 **Joly Robyn**] $D_1$. *Gentyll Robyn.*
3 **leman**] $D_1$, $D_2$. *lady.*
6 **alack**] $D_1$, $D_2$. *alas.*
7 **loveth**] $D_1$, $D_2$. *loves.*
**me**] $D_1$, $D_2$. *I.*
9 **I fynde**] $D_2$. *for I fynde.*

(3)

Ye Plaintif

Thou art happy while that doeth last
But I say as I fynde,
That womens love is but a blast
And torneth like the wynde. 16

(4)

Response

If that be true yett as thow sayst
That women turn their hart,
Then speke better of them thou mayst
In hop to have thy partt. 20

(5)

Ye Plaintif

Suche folkes shall take no harm by love
That can abide their torn;
But I alas can no way prove
In love but lack and morn. 24

(6)

[Response]

But if thow wilt avoyde thy harme
Lerne this lesson of me:
At othr fires thyself to warme,
And let theim warme with the. 28

(Signed "Wyat.")

16 like] $D_2$ as.
St. 4 is added from D. to remedy the scribal omission.
The following verse added to the first fragment in D.—

"A wel I have an other lost
Not as my nowen I do protest
But wan I have got that I have mest
I shall rejoys among the rest.
"MARY SHELTON."

## 21

(1)

Tho I cannot your crueltie constrain,
For my good will to favor me again,
Tho my true and faithfull love, 3
Have no power your hert to move,
Yet rew upon my pain! 5

(2)

Tho I your thrall must evermore remain
And for your sake my libertie restrain,
The greatest grace that I do crave 8
Is that ye would vouchesave,
To rew upon my pain! 10

(3)

Tho I have not deserved to obtain
So high Reward, but this, to serve in vain
Tho I shall have no redresse, 13
Yet of right ye can no lesse
But rew upon my pain! 15

(4)

But I se well that your high disdain
Wull no wise graunt that I shall more attain;
Yet ye must graunt at the lest 18
This my powre and small request,
Rejoyse not at my pain! 20

(Signed "Tho.")

This poem is corrected in Wiat's handwriting.

9 **vouchesave**] D. *wytsave.*

16 **But**] alt. by Wiat from *ffor.*

18 **lest**] Printed editions read *last.* The meaning is clearly *lest,* as in text A. omits ll. 18–20.

20 **Rejoyse not at**] alt. in Wiat's hand from *to rew upon.* D. *to rewe apon my payne.*

## 22

(1)

To wisshe and want and not obtain
To seke and sew ese of my pain,
Syns all that ever I do is vain, 3
What may it availl me!

(2)

All tho I stryve boeth day and howre
Against the streme of all my powre,
If fortune list yet for to lowre, 6
What may it availl me!

(3)

If willingly I suffre woo,
If from the fyre me list not goo,
If then I burn to plaine me so, 9
What may it availl me!

(4)

And if the harme that I suffre
Be run too farr oute of mesur,
To seke for helpe any further, 12
What may it availl me!

A. contains a fragment beginning at l. 9 of the poem.

2 ese] MS. spelling *esse*.

4 day and howre] D. *day and nyght*. *day* omitted in MS. and *dey* inserted in another hand.

(5)

What tho eche hert that hereth me plain,
  Pitieth and plaineth for my payn,
  If I no les in greif remain 15
    What may it availl me!

(6)

Ye tho the want of my relief
  Displease the causer of my greif,
  Syns I remain still in myschief 18
    What may it availl me!

(7)

Suche cruell chaunce doeth so me threte,
  Continuelly inward to frete,
  Then of relesse for to trete 21
    What may it availl me!

(8)

Ffortune is deiff unto my call,
  My torment moveth her not at all,
  And though she torn as doeth a ball, 24
    What may it availl me!

(9)

Ffor in despere there is no rede;
To want of ere, speche is no spede;
  To linger still, alyve as dede, 27
    What may it availl me!

(Signed "Tho.")

13 hereth] D. *heris.* A. *heares.*
14 Pitieth] D. *pitis.*
21 relesse] A. *releace.*
to trete] D. *relef for to intrete.*
23 moveth] A. *moves.*

## 23

(1)

My hope, Alas, hath me abused
And vain rejoysing hath me fed;
Lust and joye have me refused,
And carefull plaint is in their stede;
To muche avauncing slaked my spede; 5
Myrth hath caused my hevines,
And I remain all comfortles. 7

(2)

Whereto did I assure my thought
Withoute displeasure stedfastly,
In fortunes forge my Joye was wrought
And is revolted redely,
I ame mystaken wonderly; 12
For I, tho nought but faithfulnes,
Yet I remain all comfortless. 14

(3)

In gladsome chere I did delite
Till that delite did cause my smert;
And all was wrong where I thought right,
For right it was, that my true hert
Should not from trouth be set apart, 19
Syns trouth did cause me hardines
Yet I remain all comfortles. 21

12 wonderly] D. *wonderusly.*
13 tho nought] A. *thought nought.*
19 trouth] A. *trothe,* so also l. 20.
20 me] A. *my.*

(4)

Sometime delight did tune my song,
  And led my hert full plesauntly,
And to my self I saide among,
  My happ is comyng hastely,
  But it hath happed contrary: 26
    Assuraunce causeth my distres,
    And I remain all comfortles. 28

(5)

Than if my note now do vary,
  And leve his wonted plesauntnes,
The hevy burden that I cary,
  Hath alterd all my Joyefulnes;
  No pleasure hath still stedfastnes, 33
    But hast hath hurt my happines,
    And I remain all comfortles. 35

(No signature.)

23 led] A. *lead.*
29 do] A. *doth.*

## 24

(1)

What deth is worse then this,
When my delight,
My wele, my joy, my blys,
Is from my sight? 4
Boeth daye and night,
My liff alas I mys. 6

(2)

Ffor though I seme alyve,
My hert is hens;
Thus botles for to stryve,
Oute of presens 10
Of my defens
Towerd my deth I dryve. 12

(3)

Hertles, alas, what man
May long endure?
Alas how lyve I then?
Syns no recure 16
May me assure
My liff I may well ban. 18

3 **My wele, my joy, my blys**] alt. by Wiat from *My wordly joye and blys.* D. *my wordlye Joye and blise.*

(4)

Thus doeth my torment goo
  In dedly dred,
Alas, who myght lyve so
  Alyve as dede, 22
  Alyve to lede
A dedly lyff in woo. 24

(Signed "Tho.")

19 **my torment goo**] D. *my torment groo.*
22 **dede**] MS. spelling *ded.* D. *deede.*

## 25

(1)

Ons as me thought fortune me kyst,
And bad me aske what I thought best:
And I should have it as me list,
Therewith to set my hert in rest. 4

(2)

I asked nought but my dere hert
To have for evermore myn owne;
Then at an ende were all my smert,
Then should I nede no more mone. 8

(3)

Yet for all that, a stormy blast
Had overtorned this goodely day,
And fortune semed at the last
That to her promes she saide nay. 12

(4)

But, like as oon out of dispere
To soudden hope revived I;
Now fortune sheweth herself so fayer
That I content me wonderly. 16

A fragment of this poem is in D. 71b; the whole poem is in D. 73b.
1 **Ons as**] $D_1$, $D_2$. omit *as*.
5 **nought . . . hert**] T. *nought but my ladies hert.*
7 **all**] $D_1$. omits; $D_2$. as text.
8 **mone**] $D_1$, $D_2$. *to mone.*
16 **wonderly**] D, T. *wonderely.*

(5)

My moost desire my hand may reche
  My will is alwaye at my hand;
  Me nede not long for to be seche
  Her that hath power me to command. 20

(6)

What erthely thing more can I crave?
  What would I wisshe more at my will?
  No thing on erth more would I have,
  Save that I have, to have it still. 24

(7)

Ffor fortune hath kept her promes,
  In graunting me my moost desir;
  Of my sufferaunce I have redres.
  And I content me with my hiere. 28

(Signed "Tho.")

## 26

(1)

My Lute awake! perfourme the last
Labor that thou and I shall wast,
And end that I have now begon;
For when this song is song and past,
My lute be still, for I have done. 5

(2)

As to be herd where ere is none,
As lede to grave in marbill stone,
My song may perse her hert as sone;
Should we then sigh or sing or mone?
No! no! my lute, for I have done. 10

(3)

The Rokkes do not so cruelly
Repulse the waves continuelly
As she my suyte and affection;
So that I ame past remedy,
Whereby my lute and I have done. 15

(4)

Prowd of the spoyll that thou hast gott
Of simple hertes, thorough loves shot;
By whome, unkynd, thou hast theim wone,
Thinck not he hath his bow forgot,
All tho my lute and I have done. 20

1 **the last**] D. *the last labor* (scribal error).
8 **as**] alt. from *so* by scribe.
11 **Rokkes do**] D. *Rokk doth.*

(5)

Vengeaunce shall fall on thy disdain
That makest but game on ernest pain;
Thinck not alone under the sonne
Unquyt to cause thy lovers plain,
All tho my lute and I have done. 25

(6)

Perchaunce the lye wethered and old
The wynter nyght that are so cold,
Playning in vain unto the mone;
Thy wisshes then dare not be told;
Care then who lyst, for I have done. 30

(7)

And then may chaunce the to repent
The tyme that thou hast lost and spent
To cause thy lovers sigh and swone;
Then shalt thou knowe beaultie but lent,
And wisshe and want as I have done. 35

(8)

Now cesse, my lute: this is the last
Labor that thou and I shall wast,
And ended is that we begon;
Now is this song boeth song and past
My lute be still, for I have done. 40

(Signed "Tho.")

This poem was erroneously assigned to George Boleyn by T. Park in *Nugæ Antiquæ*.

21 **shall**] D. *may*.

23 **Thinck**] D. *Trow*.

26 **Perchaunce the lye**] D. *may chawnce they lye*. T. *may chance thee lie*. The MS. is alt. by Wiat from *they lay*.

27 **The wynter nyght**] D. *nyghtes*. T. *In winter nightes*. The text requires the plural noun to agree with the verb that follows.

34 **beaultie**] D. *beawte is*.

38 **we begon**] D. *I begone*, alt. to *I have now begone*.

At the end of the poem in D. are the words "ffynys q^d Wyatt."

## 27

(1)

If chaunce assynd,
Were to my mynde
By very kynd
Of destyne;
Yet would I crave 5
Nought els to have
But liff and libertie. 7

(2)

Then were I sure
I myght endure,
The displeasure
Of crueltie;
Where now I plain 12
Alas in vain
Lacking my liff for libertie. 14

(3)

Ffor withoute thone
Thothr is gone,
And there can none
It remedy;
If thone be past 19
Thothr doeth wast
And all for lack of libertie. 21

19 thone] D. *ton.*
20 thothr] D. *tothr.*

(4)

And so I dryve
  As yet alyve,
  All tho I stryve
    With myserie;
Drawing my breth, 26
Lowking for deth,
  And losse of liff for libertie. 28

(5)

But thou that still
  Maist at thy will
  Torn all this ill
    Adversitie;
For the repare 33
Of my welfare
  Graunt me but liff and libertie. 35

(6)

And if not so,
  Then let all goo,
  To wretched woo,
    And let me dye;
For thone or thothr 40
  There is none othr
  My deth, or liff with libertie. 42

(Signed "Tho.")

33 the] MS. *ye.*
40 thone or thothr] D. *ton or tothr.*

## 28

(1)

I have sought long with stedfastnes
To have had som ease of my great smert,
But nought availleth faithfulnes
To grave within your stony hert. 4

(2)

But happe and hit or els hit not,
As uncertain as is the wynde;
Right so it fareth by the shott
Of love alas that is so blynd. 8

(3)

Therefore I plaid the foole in vain,
With pitie, when I first began
Your cruell hert for to constrain,
Syns love regardeth no doulfull man. 12

(4)

But of your goodenes, all your mynde
Is that I should complain in vain;
This is the favor that, I fynde,
Ye list to here how I can plain. 16

(5)

But tho I plain to please your hert,
Trust me, I trust to temper it so
Not for to care which do revert;
All shalbe oon in welth or woo. 20

15 is] inserted in MS. same hand.
17 please] D. *eese.*
19 do revert] D. *side reverte.*

(6)

Ffor fansy rueleth, tho right say nay
Even as the goodeman kyst his kowe
None othr reason can ye lay
But as who saieth I reke not how. 24

(Signed "Tho.")

21 rueleth] D. *rulis.*
23 None othr] D. *No nothr.*

## 29

(1)

Lyk as the swanne towardis her dethe
Doeth straine her voyse with dolefull note,
Right so sing I with waste of breth,
I dye! I dye! and you regarde yt note. 4

(2)

I shall enforce my faynting breth,
That all that heris this dedlye note
Shall kno that you dothe cause my deth;
I dye! I dye! and you regarde yt note. 8

(3)

Your unkindnes hath sworne my deth,
And chaungid hathe my pleasaunte note
To paynefull sighis that stoppis my breth;
I dye! I dye! and you regarde yt note. 12

(4)

Consumythe my lif, faileth my breth;
Your fawte is forger of this note;
Melting in tearis, a cruell deth;
I dye! I dye! and you regarde yt note. 16

*Note.*—Half the page is torn away in the E. MS., leaving the first half of every line in this poem, and the latter half of every line in the following poem. Pages are also missing before the torn leaf. It is therefore copied from D. MS., f. 73a.

6 **dedlye**] D. spelling *delye* (scribal error).

(5)

My faith with me after my deth
  Byrred shalbe, and to this note
  I do bequeth my verye breth
To cry, "I dyede, and you regarde it not." 20

(Signed "Tho." in E.)

20] line faulty. *I dye* alt. to *To cry.*
Signed in D. with the interlaced letters "T V."

## 30

(1)

In eternum I was ons determined,
For to have lovid and my minde affermed,
That with my herte it shuld be confermed, 3
In eternum.

(2)

Forthwith I founde the thing that I might like,
And sought with love to warme her hert alike,
For as me thought I shulde not se the like, 6
In eternum.

(3)

To trace this daunse I put my self in prese,
Vayne hope did lede, and bad I shuld not cese
To serve, to suffer, and still to hold my pease, 9
In eternum.

(4)

With this first rule I fordred me a pase,
That as me thought, my trouthe had taken place
With full assurans to stand in her grace, 12
In eternum.

The latter part only of every line is visible in the MS. owing to the torn leaf. The spelling of the D. MS. is followed for the first part of each line.

11 **trouthe**] D. MS. spelling *trowghthe*.

(5)

It was not long er I by proofe had found
That feble bilding is on feble grounde;
For in her herte this worde ded never sownde, 15
In eternum.

(6)

In eternum then from my herte I kest
That I had first determined for the best;
Nowe in the place anothr thought dothe rest, 18
In eternum.

The D. MS. has the interlaced letters "T V" at the end of the poem. The signature is torn away in E.

## 31

(1)

Syns ye delite to knowe,
That my torment and woo
Should still encrese
Withoute relese,
I shall enforce me so, 5
That liff and all shall goo,
For to content your cruelnes. 7

(2)

And so this grevous trayne
That I so long sustayn,
Shall sometime cese,
And have redresse,
And you also remain 12
Full pleased with my pain,
For to content your cruelnes. 14

(3)

Onles that be to light,
And that ye would ye myght
Se the distresse
And hevines
Of oon slain owte right, 19
Therewith to please your sight,
And to content your cruelnes. 21

19 oon slain] D. *on yslayne.*

(4)

Then in your cruell mode,
  Would God fourthwith ye woode,
    With force expresse,
    My hert oppresse,
  To do your hert suche good, 26
To se me bathe in blode,
For to content your cruelnes. 28

(5)

Then cowld ye aske no more,
  Then should ye ease my sore,
    And the excesse
    Of myn excesse;
  And you should evermore 33
Defamed be, therefore,
For to repent your cruelnes. 35

(Signed "Tho.")

27 **To se me**] D. omits *me*.
35 **For**] D. repeats *for*.

## 32

(1)

Hevyn and erth and all that here me plain,
Do well perceve what care doeth cause me cry,
Save you alone, to whome I cry in vain,
Mercy! madame alas, I dy! I dy! 4

(2)

If that you slepe, I humbly you require
Forbere, a while, and let your rigor slake;
Syns that by you I burn thus in this fyer,
To here my plaint, dere hert, awake! awake! 8

(3)

Syns that so ofte ye have made me to wake
In plaint and teres, and in right pitious case,
Displease you not if force do now me make
To breke your slepe crieng alas! alas! 12

(4)

It is the last trouble that you shall have
Of me, madame, to here my last complaint;
Pitie at lest your poure unhappy slave
For in dispere alas I faint! I faint! 16

(5)

It is not now but long and long ago,
I have you served as to my powre and myght,
As faithfully as any man might do,
Clayming of you nothing of right, of right. 20

(6)

Save of your grace only to save my liff
  That fleith as fast as clowd afore the wynde
  For sins that first I entred in this stryff
An inward deth hath fret my mynde, my mynd. 24

(7)

If I had suffred this to you, unware,
  Myn were the fawte and you nothing to blame
  But syns you know my woo and all my care
Why do I dy alas for shame, for shame. 28

(8)

I know right well my face, my lowke, my teres,
  Myn Iyes, my Wordes, and eke my drery chiere,
  Have cryd my deth full oft into your eres,
Herd of belefe it doeth appere, appere. 32

(9)

A better prouff I se that ye would have
  How I ame dede; therefore when ye here tell
  Beleve it not, all tho ye se my grave
Cruell; unkynd! I say farewell! farewell! 36

(Signed "Tho.")

The last three stanzas are in the D. MS., fol. 11a. The first six stanzas are found in no other MS.

30 **my drery chiere]** D. *my dere chere.*

The D. MS. has the inscription "ffynys q^d Wyatt."

## 33

(1)

Comfort thy self my wofull hert,
Or shortly on thy self the wreke;
For lenght redoubleth dedly smert;
Why sighes thou hert and woult not breke! 4

(2)

To wast in sighes were pitious deth,
Alas, I fynd the faynt and weke,
Enforce thyself to lose thy breth,
Why sighes thou hert and woult not breke! 8

(3)

Thou knowest right well that no redresse
Is thus to pyne, and for to speke,
Pardy it is remediles!
Why sighes thou then and woult not breke! 12

(4)

It is to late for to refuse
The yoke when it is on thy neck;
To shake it of vaileth not to muse:
Why sighes thou then and woult not breke! 16

(5)

To sobb and sigh it were but vain,
Syns there is none that doeth it reke;
Alas thou doyst prolong thy pain,
Why sighes thou then and woult not breke! 20

(6)

Then in her sight, to move her hert,
  Seke on thyself thyself to wreke,
That she may knowe thou sufferdst smert,
  Sigh there thy last : and therewith breke. 24

(Signed "Tho.")

## 34

(1)

To cause accord or to aggre
Two contraries in oon degre,
And in oon poynct, as semeth me,
To all mans wit it cannot be 4
It is impossible!

(2)

Of hete and cold when I complain,
And say that hete doeth cause my pain,
And cold doeth shake me every vain,
And boeth at ons, I say again 8
It is impossible!

(3)

That man that hath his hert away,
If lyff lyveth there as men do say
That he, hertles, should last on day
Alyve, and not to torn to clay. 12
It is impossible!

(4)

Twixt lyff and deth, say what who sayth,
Ther lyveth no lyff that draweth breth,
They joyne so nere: and eke i faith
To seke for liff by wissh of deth 16
It is impossible!

10 lyveth] D. *lyve.*
11 That he hertles] D. *that herteles.*

(5)

Yet Love, that all things doeth subdue,
Whose power ther may no liff eschew,
Hath wrought in me, that I may rew
These miracles to be so true, 20
That are impossible.

(Signed "Tho.")

20 These miracles] D. *this myracles.*

FACSIMILE LETTER

*Brit. Mus., Cotton MS.*] [*To face p.* 135, *Vol. I.*

I beseche yt Lordshipp to pardone me ye I do not bringe you my selfe this lite ye I send you / I have so much a do to spare my bille in to the plantt.

I shold also have bene suitor to yt Lordshipp for the better my servant Thomas Gandlettyne / who hathe done me honest service / whilst I have bene forth in the Bungt shire. My small fortune is not suche ye I can recompense hym / whereby I am driven to aske yt Lordshipp's favour / yt lete and wad to the mayre and the bengh may gett hym now out of the rowm off the mastership of the Bryte howse / wich one Cowle had ye dud yesterday. And if it be possible and ye yt Lordshipp salle not other wayes prouide I shall take it among mayne my other bonde to yt lordshipp wyrt dele more thy of the profitt wete to my selfe.

The Lord send yt lordshipp good lyfe and long

yt Lordshipp's alway
most bounden
Tho Wiat

# SATIRES

## I*

Myn owne John Poynz, sins ye delight to know 1
The cause why that homeward I me drawe:
And fle the presse of courts wher so they goo:

Rather than to live thrall, under the awe 4
Of lordly lokes, wrappid within my cloke:
To will and lust lerning to set a lawe;

It is not for bicawse I skorne and moke 7
The power of them, to whome fortune hath lent
Charge over us, of Right, to strike the stroke:

But true it is that I have alwayes ment 10
Lesse to estime them then the common sort,
Of owteward thinges, that judge in their entent.

Withowte regarde what doeth inward resort. 13
I grant some tyme that of glory the fyer
Doth touch my hert; me list not to report

* The first half of this Satire, ll. 1–52, is absent from the MS. owing to missing leaves. ll. 1–52 are supplied from the D. MS., except ll. 28–30, omitted in D., and supplied from the Corpus Christi MS., Cambridge, the only complete MS. for the first Satire. ll. 18–19, and ll. 29–31 are omitted in P, A.

1 **Myn owne John Poynz**] D. *My nowne John Poynz.* P, A. *myne own J P.*
**ye**] A. *you.* The spelling adopted is the usual E. MS. spelling.

2 **The cause . . . me**] P, A. *the cause . . . do me.* T. *the causes . . . me.*

3 **fle**] A. *flye.*

6 **a lawe**] A. *alawe.*

7 **for bicawse**] P, A. omits *for.* $T_1$. omits *for.* $T_2$. *that bicause.*

8 **to whome . . . lent**] T. *whom fortune here hath lent.* A. *to whome powre hath lent.*

10 **alwayes**] A. *ever.*

13 **doeth inward**] T. *inward doth.*

14 **that . . . fyer**] T. *of glory that the fire.*

15 **touch**] P, A, T. *touch.* This reading is adopted here in place of D. MS. *twyche,* which is doubtless bad spelling for *touch.*

Blame by honor, and honor to desire. 16
But how may I this honor now attayne.
That cannot dy the color blake a lyer?

My Poynz, I cannot frame me tune to fayne, 19
To cloke the trothe for praise withoute desart,
Of them that lyst all vice for to retayne.

I cannot honour them that settes their part 22
With Venus and Baccus all theire lyff long;
Nor hold my pece of them al tho I smart.

I cannot crowche nor knelle to do so grete a wrong, 25
To worship them, lyke Gode on erthe alone,
That ar as wollffes thes sely lambes among.

I cannot with wordes complayne and mone, 28
Nor suffer nought; nor smart withoute complaint;
Nor torn the word that from my mouth is gone:

I cannot speke and loke lyke a saint; 31
Use wiles for witt, or make deceyt a pleasure;
And call craft counceill, for proffet styll to paint.

17 **this honor now attayne**] P, A. *now this honour attayne.*
18–19] Omitted in P, A.
19 **me tune**] T. *my tune.*
21 **vice**] $T_1$. *nice.* $T_2$. *vice.*
22 **settes**] T. *set.*
24 **altho**] P, A. *Though that.*
25 **to do so grete a wrong**] T. *to such a wrong.*
28–30] omitted in D.
29–31] omitted in P, A. Complete in the Corpus Christi MS., Cambridge, and in T.
28 **wordes**] T. *my wordes.*
29 **Nor suffer**] T. *and suffer.*
31 D. MS. resumed.
**a saint**] D. MS. spelling *sayntt.* T. *as a saint.*
32 **or**] A, T. *and.*
33 **And . . . paint**] T. *call craft counsaile, for lucre still to paint. counceill* is the spelling of E., l. 52. The peculiar spelling of D. is avoided, and the normal spelling of E. adopted, ll. 1–52, in order to keep this text uniform.

I cannot wrest the law to fill the coffer 34
With innocent blode to fede my sellff fat;
And doo most hurt where most help I offer.

I am not he that can alow the state 37
Of high Cesar, and dam Cato to dye,
That with his deth dyd skape oute of the gate

From Cesares handes (if Lyve do not lye), 40
And would not lyve when lyberty was lost;
So did his hert the common wele aplye.

I am not he suche eloquence to boste 43
To make the crow singing as the swan;
Nor call the Lyon of cowardes bestes the moste

That cannot take a mous as the cat can; 46
And he that dythe for hunger of the gold
Call him Alessaundre; and say that Pan

Passeth Apollo in musicke manyfold; 49
Praise Syr Thopias for a nobyll tale,
And skorne the story that the knyght told;

36 most hurt where most help I offer] P. *most hurt where my selfe I offer.* A. *myself hurt whereare my self I offer.* T. *where that most help I offer.*

38 Of high Cesar] P, A, T. *of highe Cesar.* I have adopted *high* in the place of *him*, D. MS.

39 his deth] MS. spelling *is* for *his*, and also in l. 42, *is hert.*

40 do] T. *doth.*

41 would . . . when] P, A. *will.* T. *wold . . . when.* P, A. *wheane.*

42 wele] T. *wealth.*

43 suche] MS. spelling *shuche.*

44 singing] T. *in singing.*

45 lyon] MS. spelling *lyond.*
cowardes] T. *coward.* P. *nor call the lion coward of beastes the most.*

48 Alessaundre] P, A, T. *Alexander.*

50 Thopias] A, T. *Topas.*

* Praise him for counceill that is droncke of ale, 52
Grynne when he laugheth that bereth all the swaye,
Frown when he frowneth and grone when [he] is pale;

On othres lust to hang boeth nyght and daye; 55
None of these poyntes would ever frame in me,
My wit is nought, I cannot lerne the waye;

And much the lesse of thinges that greater be 58
That asken helpe of colours of devise
To Joyne the mene with eche extremitie;

With the neryst vertue to cloke alwaye the vise; 61
And as to pourpose, likewise it shall fall
To presse the vertue that it may not rise

As dronkenes, good felloweshipp to call; 64
The frendly ffoo with his dowble face,
Say he is gentill, and courtois therewithall;

* The remainder of this Satire is taken from the E. MS.
52 **droncke**] D. *drocken.*
53 **laugheth . . . all**] P, A. omit *all.* P, A, T. *laughes.*
54 **frowneth**] T. *frownes.*
**he**] not in MS.; required for the sense, evident scribal omission.
55 **lust**] P, A. *lustes.*
**nyght and daye**] P. *day and nyght* (scribal error).
56 **would ever**] D. *would ever.* P, A. *will ever.*
57 **the waye**] P, A. *to way.*
59 **colours of devise**] P, A. *Coullours to devyse.*
61 **With . . . vise**] T. *With nearest vertue ay to cloke the vice.*
62–3 These two lines were printed twice over in T., where they occurred at bottom of one leaf and at the top of the next.
**To presse**] *To expresse*, with *ex* crossed out, scribal correction.
65 **dowble face**] T. *his faire double face.*

And say that favell hath a goodly grace 67
In eloquence; and crueltie to name
Zele of Justice; and chaunge in tyme and place;

And he that sufferth offence withoute blame 70
Call him pitefull; and him true and playn
That raileth rekles to every mans shame;

Say he is rude that cannot lye and fayn; 73
The Letcher a Lover; and tirannye
To be the right of a prynces reigne.

I cannot I, no no it will not be! 76
This is the cause that I could never yet
Hang on their slevis that way, as thou maist se,

A chipp of chaunce more than a pownd of witt. 79
This maketh me at home to hounte and to hawke,
And in fowle weder at my booke to sitt;

In frost and snowe then with my bow to stawke; 82
No man doeth mark where so I ride or goo;
In lusty lees at libertie I walke;

And of these newes I fele nor wele nor woo, 85
Sauf that a clogg doeth hang yet at my hele.
No force for that; for it is ordered so,

67 **And say that favell**] P, A. omit *say*. T. *affirm that favell*.
72 **to every mans shame**] T. *unto ech mans shame*.
76 **no it will not be**] P. *nor yet will not be*. A. *nor it will not be*.
77 **could**] P. *wold*.
80 **to hawke**] P, A. T. omit *to*.
83 **where so**] P, A. *where that*.
84 **lees**] P, A. *leases*. T. *leas*.
85 **nor wele**] P. *nother well*. A. *nother weale*. D. *no wele*.
86 **yet**] A. *yet still*.

That I may lepe boeth hedge and dike full well. 88
I ame not now in Ffraunce to judge the wyne
With saffry sauce the delicates to fele.

Nor yet in Spaigne where oon must him inclyne 91
Rather then to be outewerdly to seme;
I meddill not with wittes than be so fyne.

Nor Fflaunders chiere letteth not my sight to deme 94
Of black and white, nor taketh my wit awaye
With bestlynes; they beestes do so esteme.

Nor I ame not where Christe is geven in pray 97
For mony, poison and traison at Rome,—
A comune practise used nyght and daie.

But here I ame in Kent and Christendome, 100
Emong the muses where I rede and ryme.
Where if thou list, my Poynz, for to com,
Thou shalt be Judge how I do spend my tyme.

89 **now**] A, P. omit *now.*

90 **With . . . fele**] D. *with savorye sauce theis delicates to fele.* P, A. *What savorie sauce these . . . feel.* T. *with . . . sauce those . . . fele.*

92 **outewerdly**] D. *utterlye.*

94 **Nor . . . deme**] D. *No . . . my sight to deme.* A. *Nor . . . my wittes to deme.* P. *my sight to dime.*

95 **and white**] A, P. *nor white.*
**taketh**] A, P, T. *takes.*

96 **they beestes do so esteme**] A, P. *the beastes;* D. omits *so;* T. *such do those beastes esteme.*

97 **Christe**] T. *truth.*

98 **and traison at Rome**] T. *and treason; of some.*

99 **practise**] P. *place.* A. *plague.*

100 **here I ame**] T. *I am here.*

102 **my Poynz for to com**] P, A. *my J. P. for to come.* T. *myn owne John Poyns to come.*

## 2*

### Addressed to John Poyns

My mothers maydes when they did sowe and spyn 1
They sang sometyme a song of the feld mowse;
That fobicause her lyvelood was but thyn

Would nedes goo seke her townyssh systers howse. 4
She thought her self endured to much pain;
The stormy blastes her cave so sore did sowse.

That when the forowse swymmed with the rain, 7
She must lye cold and whete in sorry plight,
And wours then that, bare meet ther did remain

To comfort her when she her howse had dight; 10
Sometyme a barlycorn; sometyme a bene;
For which she laboured hard boeth daye and nyght

In harvest tyme, whilest she myght goo and glyne; 13
And wher stoore was stroyed with the flodd
Then well awaye! for she undone was clene.

Then was she fayne to take, in stede of fode, 16
Slepe if she myght her hounger to begile.
"My syster" quod she "hath a lyving good,

* Nott regarded this as the First Satire, contrary to the authority of the MS.
1 did] A, T. *do.*
and] D. *or.*
2 They . . . mowse] A, T. *They sing a song made of the feldishe mouse.*
3 lyvelood] D, A. *lyvelode.* T. *livelod.*
4 seke] A, T. *se.*
5 much] A, T. *grevous.*
13 whilest] A. *when.* T. *while.*
14 wher stoore] A, D. *when her store.*
17 she myght] A. *shee cowlde.*
18 quod] D. omits *quod.* D. fragment ends here.

And hens from me she dwelleth not a myle, 19
In cold and storme she lieth warme and dry,
In bed of downe; the dyrt doeth not defile

Her tender fote; she laboureth not as I; 22
Richely she fedeth, and at the richemans cost,
And for her meet she nydes not crave nor cry.

By se, by land, of the delicates the moost 25
Her Cater sekes, and spareth for no perell;
She fedeth on boyled, bacon meet, and roost,

And hath therof neither charge nor travaill. 28
And when she list, the licor of the grape
Doeth glad her hert: till that her belly swell.

And at this jorney she maketh but a jape: 31
So fourth she goeth, trusting of all this welth,
With her syster her part so for to shape,

That if she myght kepe herself in helth 34
To lyve a Lady, while her liff doeth last.
And to the dore now is she com by stelth,

22 **laboureth**] A, T. *labours.*
23 **fedeth**] A, T. *fedes.*
24 **nydes**] A. *neede.*
25 **the delicates**] A, T. omit *the.*
27 **bacon**] MS. spelling might either be *e* or *o*, sense requires *bacen.* Old form of strong verb now become weak.
27 **She . . . roost**] A, T. *she fedes on* (*boyle* T., *boylde* A.) *meat, bake meat and on rost.*
28 **And hath . . . travaill**] A, T. *And hath therfore no whit of* (*chardge* A., *charge* T.) *nor travayle* (*travell* T.).
31 **she maketh**] A, T. *makes she.*
34 **kepe**] A, T. *there kepe.*

And with her foote anon she scrapeth full fast. 37
  Thothr for fere durst not well scarse appere,
  Of every noyse so was the wretche agast.

At last she asked softly who was there. 40
  And in her langage, as well as she cowd,
  " Pepe," quod the othr, " syster, I ame here."

" Peace," quod the townysshe mowse, " why spekest
    thou so lowde? " 43
  And by the hand she toke her fayer and well,
  " Welcom," quod she, " my syster, by the Roode."

She fested her that Joy it was to tell 46
  The faer they had : they drancke the wyne so clere :
  And as to pourpose, now and then it fell,

She chered her with : " How syster, what chiere " 49
  Amyddes this Joye befell a sorry chaunce,
  That well awaye ! the straunger bought full dere

The fare she had; for as she loke a scaunce, 52
  Under a stole she spied two stemyng * Ise
  In a rownde hed with sherp erys. In Fraunce

37 scrapeth] A, T. *scrapes.*
38 scarse] A. omits.
41 cowd] *cowld* with *l* crossed out (same ink).
43 townysshe] A, T. *towne.*
  spekest ] A. *speak'st.*
45 by the Roode] *my* with *by* overwritten in MS. same hand.
46 it was] A. omits *it.*
52 loke] A, T. *lokt.*
  a] MS. *as* with *s* crossed out by scribe.
53 stole] A *stoole*, T, *stole.*
  spied] A. *espyed.*
* Stemying = shining.

Was never mowse so ferd, for tho [unwyse] 55
Had not ysene such a beest before,
Yet had nature taught her after her gyse

To knowe her ffoo, and dred him evermore. 58
The towney mowse fled, she knewe whether to goo;
Thothr had no shift, but wonders sore

Fferd of her liff, at home she wyshed her tho, 61
And to the Dore alas, as she did skipp,
Thevyn it would lo! and eke her chaunce was so,

At the threshold her sely fote did tripp, 64
And ere she myght recover it again,
The traytor Catt had caught her by the hipp;

And made her there against her will remain, 67
That had forgotten her poure suretie, and rest,
For semyng welth wherin she thought to rayne.

Alas! my Poynz, how men do seke the best 70
And fynde the wourst, by error as they stray;
And no marvaill; when sight is so opprest,

And blynde the gyde; anon, owte of the way 73
Goeth gyde and all, in seking quyete liff.
O wretched myndes! there is no gold that may

55 for tho] the line in the MS. is incomplete. A, T. amend *for the unwise.*
56 ysene] MS. *Isene.*
59 towney] A, T. *towne.*
60 Thothr] A, T. *The other.*
63 Thevyn] A, T. *The heaven.*
65 recover it] *it recover*, alt. by scribe as in text.
68 forgotten her poure suretie] A, T. *forgot her powre. suretie.*
69 semyng] A. *seeking.*
71 wourst] A. *worse.*
73 blynde] A, T. *blindes.*

Graunt that ye seke; no warr, no peace, no stryff. 76
No, no, all tho thy hed were howpt with golde,
Sergeaunt with mace, hawbert, sword, nor knyff,

Cannot repulse the care that folowe should. 79
Eche kynd of lyff hath with hym his disease.
Lyve in delight evyn as thy lust would.

And thou shalt fynde, when lust doeth moost the please, 82
It irketh straite, and by it self doeth fade:
A small thing it is that may thy mynde apese.

Non of ye all there is, that is so madde 85
To seke grapes upon brambles or breers;
Nor none I trow that hath his wit so badd

To set his hay * for Conys over Ryvers; 88
Ne ye se not a dragg net for an hare;
And yet the thing that moost is your desire

Ye do mysseke with more travaill and care. 91
Make playn thyn hert, that it be not knotted
With hope or dred; and se thy will be bare

76 ye] A, T. *you.*
77 thy hed were howpt] A. *thie head weare hoope of golde.*
78 hawbert] A, T. insert *with* before *hawbert.*
79 Cannot repulse] A. *that can repulse.*
81 delight] A. *deligntes.* 2nd ed. T. *delits.*
82 doeth moost the please] A. *the most doth please.*
84 it is] A, T. *is it.*
85 ye] A, T. *you.*
86 To seke . . . breers] A, T. *To seke for grapes on brambles or on briars.*
87 Nor . . . his wit] A. *Nor . . . a wit.* T. *For none . . . his witte.*
* hay = net.
89 Ne ye se] A, T. *nor ye set.*
91 Ye do mysseke] A. *You do myslyke.* T. *You.*

From all affectes, whome Vice hath ever spotted. 94
Thy self content with that is the assigned,
And use it well that is to the allotted.

Then seke no more owte of thy self to fynde 97
The thing that thou haist sought so long before;
For thou shalt fele it sitting in thy mynde,

Madde if ye list to continue your sore. 100
Let present passe and gape on tyme to com,
And diepe yourself in travaill more and more;

Hens fourth, my Poyngz, this shalbe all and some; 103
These wretched fooles shall have nought els of me;
But to the great God and to his high dome,

None other pain pray I for theim to be. 106
But when the rage doeth led theim from the right,
That lowking backward, Vertue they may se

Evyn as she is, so goodly fayre and bright. 109
And, whilst they claspe their lustes in armes a crosse,
Graunt theim goode Lorde, as thou maist of thy myght,
To frete inward for losing suche a losse.

94 From . . . spotted] A. *for all affectes whome vice hath never spotted.*
99 sitting] A, T. *sticking.*
100 Madde] A. *made.*
102 yourself] A. *thieself.* 2nd ed. T. *thy self.*
105 high dome] A, T. omit *high.*
107 theim] MS. *then.* Sense requires *them.*
108 Vertue] A. omits *vertue.*

## 3*

### Addressed to *Sir Francis Brian.*

A spending hand that alway powreth owte 1
Had nede to have a bringer in as fast:
And, on the stone that still doeth tourne abowte

There groweth no mosse: these proverbs yet do last, 4
Reason hath set theim in so sure a place,
That lenght of yeres their force can never wast.

When I remembr this, and eke the case 7
Where in thou stondes, I thowght forthwith to write
Brian, to thee, who knows how great a grace

In writing is to cownsell man the right; 10
To the therefore, that trottes still up and downe
And never restes, but runnyng day and nyght

From Reaulme to Reaulme, from cite, strete, and towne, 13
Why doest thou were thy body to the bones
And myghtst at home slepe in thy bed of downe,

And drynck goode ale so noppy for the noyns 16
Fede thyself fat and hepe up pownd by pownd
Lykist thou not this? no: why? for swyne so groyns

* Slightly later than Satires 1 and 2.
4 **groweth**] A. *growes.*
6 **lenght**] MS. spelling *lenght.*
8 **stondes**] A. *stand'st.* T. *standst.*
16 **noppy for the noyns**] A. *nappie for the nones.*

In stye and chaw the tordes molded on the grownd 19
And dryvell on perilles the hed still in the maunger
Then of the harp the Asse to here the sownd

So sackes of dust be filled up in the cloyster 22
That servis for lesse than do thes fatted swyne
Tho I seme lene and dry withoute moyster

Yet woll I serve my prynce, my Lord and thyn, 25
And let theim lyve to fede the panche that list,
So I may lyve to fede both me and myn.

By God, well sayde! but what and if thou wist 28
How to bryng in as fast as thou doest spend
That would I lerne. And it shall not be myst

To tell the how. Now hark what I intend: 31
Thou knowst well, first, who so can seke to plese
Shall pourchase frendes where trowght shall but offend;

Ffle therefore trueth, it is boeth welth and ese 34
For tho that trouth of every man hath prayse
Full nere that wynd goeth trouth in great misese.

19 the tordes] A, T. *dung.*
20 the hed] A, T. *with head.*
21 Then . . . sownd] A. *So on.* T. *So of.* A, T. *the harpe the Asse doth heare the sound.*
22–3 A, T.—
" So sackes of dust be filde. The neate courtier
So serves for lesse than do these fatted swine."
24 withoute] A, T. *withouten.*
25 woll] A. *will.*
27 lyve to fede] So A, T. MS. *fede to lyve*, scribal error?
34 boeth] A. *for.*
35 hath] A. *have.*

Use Vertu as it goeth now a dayes so 37
In word alone to make thy langage swete
And of the dede yet do not as thou say so

Elles be thou sure thou shalt be farr unmyt 40
To get thy bred, eche thing is now so skant;
Seke still thy proffet upon thy bare fete;

Lend in nowise for fere that thou do want, 43
Onles it be as to a dogge a chese,
By which retorn be sure to wyn a kant

Of half at lest; it is not good to lese. 46
Lerne at Kittson that in a long white cote
From under the stall withoute landes or feise

Hath lept into the shopp; who knoweth by rote 49
This rule that I have told thee here before.
Sumtyme also riche age begynneth to dote:

Se thou when there thy gain may be the more, 52
Stay him by the arme where so he walke or goo,
Be nere alway and if he koggh to sore,

37 **now a dayes so**] MS. reading. A, T. *now a dayes.*
39 **the . . . say so**] MS. *say so*, rhyming with *dayes so*, l. 37. A, T. make rhyming words *dayes, sayes.*
44 **dogge**] A, T. *calfe.*
45 **By which . . . kant**] So T. 1st ed.; 2nd ed. and A. reads: *But if thou can be sure to win a cant.*
47 **Kittson**] A, T. *the ladde.*
48 **withoute**] A, T. *withouten.*
49 **knoweth**] A, T. *knowes.*
51 **begynneth**] A, T. *beginnes.*
54 **koggh**] archaic spelling for *cough.*

When he hath spit, tred owte and please him so. 55
A diligent knave that pikes his maisters purse
May please him so that he withouten mo

Executor is, and what is he the wourse? 58
But if so chaunce you get nought of the man
The Wedow may for all thy charge deburse

A ryveld skyn a stynking breth what then? 61
A tothles mowth shall do thy lips no harme,
The gold is good and tho she curse or ban

Yet where the list thou maist ly good and warme; 64
Let the old mule byte upon the bridill
Whilst ther do ly a swetter in thyn arme.

In this also se you be not idill 67
Thy nece, thy cosyn, thy sister or thy doghter
If she be faire, if handsom by her myddell

Yf thy better hath her love besoght her 70
Avaunce his cause and he shall help thy nede
It is but love, turne it to a lawghter.

But ware I say so gold the helpe and spede 73
That in this case thou be not so unwise
As Pandare was in suche a like dede;

55 **when**] A, T. *what.*
60 **charge deburse**] A. *payne disburse.* T. 1st ed. *deburse,* 2nd *disburse.*
67 **se you**] MS. *thou* replaced by *you* (in the same hand). A. *see that thou.* T. *se thou.*
68 **thy sister**] A. omits.
72 **turne it**] A. *turne thou it.*

Ffor he the ffooll of conscience was so nyse, 76
  That he no gayn would have for all his payne.
  Be next thy self for frendshipp beres no prise.

Laughst thou at me? Why, do I speke in vayne? 79
  No not at thee, but at thy thrifty gest?
  Would'st thou I should, for any losse or gayne,

Chaunge that for gold that I have tan for best 82
  Next godly thinges, to have an honest name?
  Should I leve that? then take me for a beest—

Nay then farewell, and if you care for shame, 85
  Content thee then with honest povertie,
  With fre tong, what the myslikes to blame;

And for thy trouth somtyme adversitie; 88
  And therewithall this thing I shall the gyve:
In this worould now litle prosperite,
  And coyne to kepe as water in a syve.

84 beest] the usual spelling for this word, see 1, l. 96. MS. *best*, to agree with *best*, l. 82.
85 you] A, T. *thou*.
89 this thing] A. *this guifte*.

# POEMS WRITTEN AFTER 1536

I

[illegible]

Though this the port, and I, thy servaunt true,
And thou thy self doist cast thy bemes from hye
From thy chiefe howse, promising to [illegible]
Both fyres and the Anker, behold yet how that I,
Banysshed from my blisse, carefully do crye:
"Helpe now, Citherea, my lady dere,
[illegible]

Alas the [illegible] dredfull absence geveth:
Withoute thyn ayde, assuraunce is there none;
The firme faith, that in the water floteth
[illegible] therefore, in thee it is alone;
Stay that with faith that faithfully doth mone,
And thou also gevest me both hope and fere;
Remedie thou me, my [illegible] is gone.

[illegible]

By seas and hilles elonged from thy sight,
Thy wonted grace reducing to my mynde,
In sted of slepe, thus I occupie the night;

---

[illegible]

[illegible]

[illegible]

REPRODUCTION OF THE HOLBEIN PORTRAIT

*Copyright by Braun & Co.*

*Windsor*] [*To face p.* 158, *Vol. I.*

# POEMS WRITTEN AFTER 1536

## I

### (1)

Though this port : and I, thy servaunt true,
And thou thy self doist cast thy bemes from hye
From thy chieff howse, promising to renew
Boeth Joye and eke delite, behold yet how that I,
Bannisshed from my blisse, carefully do crye, 5
" Helpe now, Citherea, my lady dere,
" My ferefull trust," en vogant la galere. 7

### (2)

Alas the dowbt that dredfull absence geveth
Withoute thyn ayde; assuraunce is there none :
The ferme faith, that in the water floteth
Succor thou therefor; in thee it is alone :
Stay that with faith that faithfully doeth mone; 12
And thou also gevest me boeth hope and fere;
Remembr thou me, en vogant la galerie. 14

### (3)

By sees and hilles elonged from thy sight
Thy wonted grace reducing to my mynde,
In sted of slepe, thus I occupy the nyght;

Found only in the E. MS.

1 **Though this port**] Editors have assumed an omission of *the* before *port*. Standing as the first line in a MS. that Wiat corrected, it is better to read as elliptical with *be* understood, in each half of the verse.

14 **galerie**]the MS. spelling for last word in each stanza except the first. In every case, however, it rimes with *-ere* (see ll. 6, 13, 20).

A thowsand thoughtes and many dowbtes I fynde,
And still I trust thou canst not be unkinde; 19
Or els dispere, my comfort and my chiere
Would she fourthwith, en vogant la galerie. 21

(4)

Yet on my faith, full litle doeth remain
Of any hope, whereby I may myself uphold,
For syns that onely wordes do me retain,
I may well thinck the affection is but cold;
But syns my will is nothing as I would, 26
But in thy handes it resteth hole and clere,
Forget me not, en vogant la galerie. 28

## 2

(1)

Processe of tyme worketh suche wounder,
That water, which is of kynd so soft,
Doeth perse the marbell stone a sonder
By litle droppes faling from a loft. 4

(2)

And yet an hert that sems so tender
Receveth no dropp of the stilling teres,
That alway still cause me to render
The vain plaint that sowndes not in her eres. 8

(3)

So cruel alas is nowght alyve,
So fiers, so froward, so owte of fframe;
But some way, some tyme, may so contryve
By mens the wild to temper and tame. 12

(4)

And I that alwaies have sought and seke
Eche place, eche tyme, for som lucky daye,
This fiers Tigre : lesse I fynde her meke
And more denyd, the lenger I pray. 16

12 mens] i. e. *means*.
wild] MS. spelling *whild* corrected (later hand).

(5)

The lyon in his raging furor
  Forberis that sueth mekenes for his (boote);
And thou alas, in extreme dolor
  The hert so low thou tredis under thy foote. 20

(6)

Eche fiers thing lo how thou doest excede,
  And hides it under so humble a face;
And yet the humble to helpe at nede
  Nought helpeth tyme, humblenes, nor place. 24

(Signed "Tho.")

18 boote] the rhyme is wanting, *boote* (remedy), fits in with the sense. Rhyme wanting in A.

20 tredis . . . foote] MS. *doest excede*, written before *tredis*, then crossed out, and written as in text, by scribe, evidently an error, from following line.

This poem and the next are found together in the A. MS. It will be remembered that the group of Sonnets in A. follows the same order as in E. Such indications seem to point to a compilation of the MS. (of which A. is the eighteenth century copy) at first hand from Wiat's MS.

## 3

(1)

After great stormes the cawme retornis,
And plesanter it is thereby;
Fortune likewise that often tornis
Hath made me now the moost happy. 4

(2)

Thevin that pited my distres,
My just desire and my cry,
Hath made my langour to cesse,
And me also the most happy. 8

(3)

Whereto dispaired ye my frendes;
My trust alway in hid ly,
That knoweth what my though(t) intendes,
Whereby I lyve the most happy. 12

(4)

Lo! what can take hope from that hert
That is assured stedfastly;
Hope therefore ye that lyve in smert,
Whereby I ame the most happy. 16

(5)

And I that have felt of your paine,
Shall pray to God continually
To make your hope your helth retayne,
And me also the most happy. 20

5 Thevin] A. *The heaven.*
7 langour] trisyllabic. A. *demgour* (evident error).
10 in hid] MS. reading.
11 thought] MS. sp. *though.*
16 the most happy] A. *the most unhappie;* this reading is disastrous to Wiat's meaning.

## 4

(1)

All hevy myndes
Do seke to ese their charge,
And that that moost theim byndes
To let at large. 4

(2)

Then why should I
Hold payne within my hert,
And may my tune apply
To ease my smart. 8

(3)

My faithfull lute
Alone shall here me plaine;
For els all othr sute
Is clene in vaine. 12

(4)

Ffor where I sue
Redresse of all my grieff,
Lo they do most eschew
My hertes relieff. 16

(5)

Alas, my dere
Have I deserved so,
That no help may appere
Of all my wo? 20

This poem is found only in the E. MS.
14 grieff] In the earlier part of the MS. the spelling is *greiff*.

(6)

Whome speke I to,
Unkynd and deff of ere;
Alas, lo I go,
And wot not where. 24

(7)

Where is my thoght?
Where wanders my desire?
Where may the thing be soght
That I require? 28

(8)

Light in the wynde
Doth fle all my delight;
Where trouth and faithfull mynde
Are put to flyght. 32

(9)

Who shall me gyve
Fetherd wynges for to fle,
The thing that doeth me greve
That I may se? 36

(10)

Who would go seke
The cause whereby to payne?
Who could his foo beseke
For ease of payne? 40

(11)

My chaunce doeth so
My wofull case procure,
To offer to my ffoo
My hert to cure. 44

(12)

What hope I then
To have any redresse?
Of whome or where or when
Who can expresse? 48

(13)

No! sins dispaire
Hath set me in this case,
In vain oft in the ayre
To say 'Alas'! 52

(14)

I seke nothing
But thus for to discharge
My hert of sore sighing,
To plaine at large. 56

(15)

And with my lute
Sum tyme to ease my pain,
For els all othr sute
Is clene in vain. 60

(Signed "Tho.")

## 5

(1)

To seke eche where, where man doeth lyve,
The See, the Land: the Rocke, the Clyve,
Ffraunce, Spayne, and Inde and every where;
Is none a greater gift to gyve 4
Lesse sett by oft, and is so lyeff and dere,
Dare I well say than that I gyve to yere. 6

(2)

I cannot gyve browches nor ringes,
Thes Goldsmithes work and goodly thinges
Piery nor perle, oryente and clere;
But for all that is no man bringes 10
Lesser Juell unto his Lady dere
Dare I well say then that I gyve to yere. 12

(3)

Nor I seke not to fetche it farr,
Worse is it not tho it be narr,
And as it is, it doeth appere
Uncontrefaict, mistrust to barr; 16
Lest hole and pure withouten pere
Dare I well say the gyft I gyve to yere 18

This poem is found only in the E. MS.

1 where] i. e. *place.*

4 gift] *a gift*, with *a* crossed out by scribe.

5 and dere] *and* inserted by Wiat.

10 is no man bringes] corrected to *can no man bring*, later hand; it disturbs the rhyme.

(4)

To the therefore the same retain
  The like of the to have again
  Ffraunce would I gyve if myn it were
Is none alyve in whome doeth rayne 22
  Lesser disdaine; frely, therefore, to here
  Dare I well gyve I say my hert to yere. 24

(Signed "Tho.")

24 yere] This word is spelt *yer*, with the upward stroke that occasionally denotes a final *e*.

In the other verses the MS. spelling is as in text.

## 6

(1)

O goodely hand
Wherein doeth stand
My hert distrast in payne;
Faire hand, Alas 4
In litle spas
My liff that doeth restrayne. 6

(2)

O fyngers slight
Departed right,
So long so small so rownd;
Goodely begone, 10
And yet alone
Most cruell in my wound. 12

(3)

With Lilis whight
And Roses bright
Doeth stryve thy color faire;
Nature did lend 16
Eche fyngers ende
A perle for to repayre. 18

Found also in the Harleian MS. with slight alterations, and marked "T. W. fol. 24a.

4 **faire hand**] H. *dere hand.*

6 **that**] H. *thou.* This is the better reading.

15 **stryve**] H. *strayne.*

(4)

Consent at last,
  Syns that thou hast
My hert in thy demayne;
  For service trew 22
  On me to rew
And reche me love agayne. 24

(5)

And if not so,
  Then with more woo,
Enforce thiself to strayne
  This simple hert 28
  That suffereth smart,
And rid it owte of payne. 30

(Signed "Tho.")

29 suffereth] H. *suffered.*

## 7

## A Trilogy on Love

### PART I

(1)

Lo, what it is to love!
Lerne ye, that list to prove,
At me I say,
No ways that may 4
The grownd is greiff remove,
My liff alwaie,
That doeth decaye;
Lo! what it is to love. 8

(2)

Ffle alwaye from the snare,
Lerne by me to beware,
Of suche a trayne,
Which doubles payne, 12
And endles woo and care,
That doth retayne;
Which to refrayne,
Fle alwaye from the snare. 16

(3)

To love and to be wise,
To rage with good admyse,
Now thus now than
Now of now an 20

12 **doubles**] *les* of this word obliterated by a blot.
20 **Now of now an**] i. e. *Now off now on.*

Uncerteyn as the dyse;
  There is no man
  At ons that can
To love and to be wise. 24

(4)

Suche are the dyvers throws,
Suche, that no man knows
  That hath not profd,
  And ons have losd: 28
Suche are the raging woos:
  Soner reprofd
  Then well remofd,
Suche are the dyvers throws. 32

(5)

Love is a fervent fire
Kendeld by hote desire,
  For a short pleasure,
  Long displeasur; 36
Repentaunce is the hire;
  A poure tresoure,
  Withoute mesure,
Love is a fervent fire. 40

Lo! what it is to love, etc.

21 omitted by scribe, inserted by Wiat.

41 This line is written in the MS. as an indication that the whole first verse is to be repeated. Cf. "At moost mischeefe," p. 100.

## PART II

(1)

Leve thus to slander love!
Though evill, with suche it prove
  Which often use,
  Love to mysuse, 4
And loving to reprove;
  Such cannot chose,
  For their refuse,
But thus, to slaunder love. 8

(2)

Ffle not so much the snare;
Love sildam causeth care;
  But by deserftes
  And crafty partes, 12
Som lese their owne welfar;
  Be true of hertes,
  And for no smartes
Fle not so much the snare 16

(3)

To love and not to be wise
Is but a mad devise;
  Such love doeth last
  As sure and fast 20
As chaunce on the dyse;
  A bitter tast
  Coms at the last,
To love and not to be wise. 24

(4)

Such be the plaisaunt daies,
Such be the honest wayes;
  There is no man,
  That fully can 28
Know it, but he that sayes
  Loving to ban
  Were folly then!
Such be the pleasaunt daies. 32

(5)

Such is a plaisaunt fire,
Kyndeled by true desire;
  And though the payne
  Cause men to playne 36
Sped well is oft the hiere.
  Then though some fayne
  And lese the gayne
Love is a pleasaunt fire. 40

30 **Loving**] MS. spelling *lovinng*.

PART III

(1)

Who most doeth slaunder love
The dede must alwaye prove;
  Trouth shall excuse
  That you accuse, 4
For slaunder and reprove;
  Not by refuse,
  But by abuse
You most do slaunder love. 8

(2)

Ye graunt it is a snare!
And would us not beware!
  Lest that your trayne
  Should be to playne, 12
Ye colour all the care!
  Lo, how you fayne,
  Pleasur for payne,
And graunt it is a snare. 16

(3)

To love and to be wise!
It were a straunge devise!
  But from that tast
  Ye vow the fast,— 20
On zyns tho run your dise,
  Ambs-as may hast
  Your payne to wast
To love, and to be wise. 24

22 **Ambs-as**] i. e. *ambs-ace.* Written *Ambs as* in the MS.

(4)

Of all such pleasaunt dayes,
Of all suche pleasaunt playes,
  Without deserft,
  You have your part, 28
And all the worould so says;
  Save that poure hert
  That for more smart
Feleth yet suche pleasaunt dayes. 32

(5)

Such fire and suche hete
Did never make ye swete,
  For withoute payne
  You best obtayne 36
To good spede and to great;
  Who so doeth playne,
  You best do fayne
Such fire and such hete. 40

Who now doeth slaunder Love, etc.

(Signed "Tho.")

41 **Who . . . Love**] This line is written in the MS. as an indication that the whole of the first verse is to be repeated.

The signature is written on the page where this poem begins, following the usual order of the MS. The second and third parts were taken as two separate poems by the intending editor of the MS. This is the last entry made by the scribe who has copied the greater number of the poems in a very beautiful hand. See the reproduction of fol. 4a and fol. 31a, pp. 2, 45.

## 8

### *Treizaine*

Yf in the world ther be more woo
  Than I have yn my harte,
Wher so ytt is, itt doithe com fro,
And in my brest there doithe itt gro, 4
  For to encrease my smarte.
Alas I ame recepte of every care,
And of my liff eche sorrow claymes his parte.
Who list to lyve yn quyetnes 8
    By me lett hym beware,
Ffor I by highe disdayne
    Ame made withoute redresse,
And unkyndenes alas hathe slayne 12
    My poore trew hert all comfortles.

(Signed "Tho.")

A new hand in the MS., probably that of Wiat's secretary in Spain; there is also a slight difference of spelling.

2 I have yn] D. *I have now within.*

5 For] MS. *From*, evident error in copying.

10 highe] D. *gret.*

12 alas] D. omits.

13 My poore trew hert] D. *A symple hart.* *poure* is the usual spelling of *poor*, in the MS.

## 9

(1)

Thanswere that ye made to me my dere
  Whan I did sewe for my poore hartes redresse
Hath so appalld my countenaunce and my chere,
  That yn this case I ame all comfortelesse
  Sins I of blame no cawse can well expresse 5

(2)

I have no wrong where I can clayme no right:
  Nowght tane me fro, wher I nothing have had:
Yete of my wo I can nott so be quyte:
  Namely, sins that anothr may be glad
  With that, that thus in sorowe makethe me sad. 10

(3)

Another, why, shall lyberty be bond!
  Ffre hert may not be bond but by desert

* * * *

(4)

Nor none can clayme I say by former graunte
  That knowithe nott of any graunt att all
And by deserte I dare well make avaunt,
  Of faythfull will, ther is no wher that shall
  Bere you more trowthe, more redy att your call. 17

The poem is written in the same hand as the preceding poem.

St. 3. After the second stanza, at the foot of the page are two lines, these are evidently meant for the beginning of the third stanza; the space left for the completion of the stanza is now filled with mathematical problems. The poem continues on the next page with stanza 4, *Nor none can clayme.* Tottel does not record the odd lines.

*Variants in T.*

13 Nor none] T. *Yet none.*

(5)

Now, good then call agayne that frendly worde
  That seithe your frende in saving of his payne
And say, my dere, that itt was sayde in borde
  Late or too sone lett that nott rule the gayne
  Wher with free will trew deserte retayne. 22

*Variants in T.*

18 **frendly**] T. *bitter.*
19 **That . . . payne**] T. *That toucht your frend so nere with pangs of paine.*
21 **that**] T. *it.*
22 **free will**] T. adds *doeth* after *will.*

## 10

## *Débat*

(*Argument.*) Most wretched hart most myserable,
Syns the comforte is from the fled,
Syns all the trouthe is turned to fable,
Most wretched harte why arte thow nott ded? 4

(*Reply.*) No! no! I lyve and must doo still,
Whereof I thank God and no mo.
Ffor I me selff have all my will,
And he is wretched that wens hym so. 8

(*A.*) Butt yete thow hast bothe had, and lost
The hope so long that hathe the fed,
And all thy travayle, and thy cost;
Most wretched harte why arte thow nott ded? 12

(*R.*) Som other hope must fede me new;
Yff I have lost, I say, what tho?
Dyspayre shall nott throwghe ynsew
For he is wretched that wenys hym so. 16

(*A.*) The sonne the mone doeth frowne on the,
Thou hast darkenes in daylyghtes stede,
As good in grave as soo to be;
Moost wretched hert why art thou not ded? 20

(*R.*) Some plesaunt sterre may shewe me light
But tho the heven wold worke me woo,
Who hath himself shal stand up right,
And he is wretched that wens him soo. 24

St. 1–4 in the same handwriting as Nos. 9, 10; the remainder of the poem and the three following entries in another hand, with different spelling.

17 A fresh page of the MS. and a new hand begins here.

19 **As . . . as**] MS. spelling curious, resembles *ar*. This stanza is on a new page. The later hand, who was preparing the poems.

(*A.*) Hath he himself that is not sure?
His trust is like as he hath sped;
Against the streme thou maist not dure;
Most wretched herte why art thou not ded? 28

(*R.*) The last is worse, who feres not that?
He hath himself where so he goo,
And he that knoweth what is what
Sayeth he is wretched that wens him soo. 32

(*A.*) Seist thou not how they whet their teth,
Which to touche the sometime ded drede?
They finde comforte for thy mischief;
Moost wretched hert why art thou not dede? 36

(*R.*) What tho that currs do fall by kinde
On him that hathe the overthro?
Al that can not opresse my mynde,
For he is wretched that wens him soo. 40

(*A.*) Yet can it not be thenne denyd
It is as certain as thy crede;
Thy gret unhap thou canst not hid;
Unhappy thenne, why art thou not dede? 44

(*R.*) Unhappy, but no wretche therefore,
For happe doth come agayne and goo;
For whiche I kepe my self in store,
Sins unhap cannot kil me so. 48

(Signed "Tho.")

31 **what is what**] *Hot is hot* (G. F. Nott), surely an error in the printing.
41 **it**] MS. *is*, (error?)

The later intending editor of the MS. took stanza 5 to the end of this poem to be a new entry, and has written "1 ent" above stanza 5. The first four stanzas, being in the same hand as the preceding poem, seem to have been taken as the conclusion of No. 9, for there is no heading to No. 10.

## 11

(1)

And if an Iye may save or sleye
  And streke more diepe than wepon longe;
And if an Iye by subtil play,
  May move oon more then any tonge;
  How can ye say that I do wronge 5
Thus to suspect without deserte?
For the Iye is traitor of the herte. 7

(2)

To frame all wel, I ame content
  That it were done unwetingly;
But yet I say, who wol assent
  To do but wel, do no thing whie
  That men shuld deme the contrary? 12
For it is said by men expert,
That the Iye is traitor of the hert. 14

(3)

But yet alas, that loke all sowle
  That I doo clayme of right to have,
Shuld not methinkes goo seke the scole
  To plese all folke: for who can crave
  Frendlier thing then hert witsave? 19
By loke to give in frendely parte;
For the Iye is traitor of the hert. 21

1 **Iye**] MS. spelling here *Ie*, but as text in l. 3, which is the usual spelling of this text.

4 **oon**] MS. spelling *on*.

**then**] MS. spelling *thenne*, also ll. 19, 25 and 42.

5 **can**] MS. spelling *canne*, also in ll. 18 and 33. In such cases of difference in spelling, that of the chief scribe is adopted as the normal spelling in the text, and good early 16th-century spelling.

This portion is partially entered f. 62b and crossed out.

(4)

And my suspect is without blame,
For as ye saye, not only I
But othr moo have denyd the same;
Then it is not Jelowsye,
But subtill loke of rekeles Iye 26
Did raunge to farre to make me smart,
Ffor the Iye is traitor of the hert. 28

(5)

But I, your frende, shall take it thus,
Sins you wol soo, as stroke of chaunce,
And leve furder for to discus
Wither the stroke did sticke or glaunce;
But scuse who can, let him avaunce 33
Dissembled lokes: but for my parte
My Iye must stil betray myn herte. 35

(6)

And of this grief ye shalbe quitte
In helping trowth stedfast to goo;
The time is longe that doeth sitt
Feble and weike and suffreth woo.
Cherish him well, continewe soo 40
Let him not fro your hart ascart
Thenne feres not the Iye to shewe the hert. 42

29 **frende**] MS. spelling *freende*.

33 **can**] MS. spelling *canne*.

35 **myn herte**] MS. spelling *my harte*. Wiat and the chief scribe spell *myn* before vowel or *h*. *harte* is not adopted here to harmonize with *parte* (34), because the spelling is not consistently followed throughout the poem (see ll. 20–21, 27–28, 41–42, where MS. spelling *hert* rimes with *parte*, *smart*, *ascart*.

Found only in E. Following this poem is a portion of the paraphrase of Ps. 37, ll. 1–36, in the same hand. One or two MS. pages have been lost here.

## 12

What rage is this? What furour of what kynd?
What powre, what plage doth wery thus my mynd?
With in my bons to rancle is assind
What poyson, plesant swet? 4

Lo se myn iyes swell with contynuall terys
The body still away sleples it weris:
My fode nothing my faintyng strenght reperis,
Nor doth my lyms sustayne. 8

In diepe wid wound the dedly stroke doth torne
To curid skarre that never shall retorne.
Go to, triumph, reioyse thy goodly torne,
Thi frend thow dost opresse. 12

Written and corrected by Wiat, fol. 69b. The corrected portion is in faded ink: the first stanza is in the same ink as the corrected part, hence this stanza was evidently added later as an introduction to the original verses 2–5.

This is the last secular poem in this part of the MS. which is authoritative. On the next page, fol. 70a, are the first two lines of a poem in Wiat's hand written in the long couplet. The blank space left was eventually used by one of the Harington family to copy in the Epigram "Vulcan begat me." The letters to his son follow, fol. 71a–73b. After an interval filled with seventeenth-century writings come the Psalms, fol. 86a. After the Psalms is the unfinished "Song of Iopas."

*Variants.*

1–3 **kynd, mynd, assind**] rymes replace original *excesse, opresse, cesse.*
2 **what plage**] alt. from *what poyson.*
3 **my**] alt. from *the.*
**is assind**] alt. from *doth not cesse.*
5 **myn iyes**] alt. from *my chekes.*
6 **away sleples**] tr. from original reading.
8 **sustayne**] so first reading alt. to *redresse*, alt. back to *sustayne.*
9 **In diepe wid wound**] alt. from *the strok doth* (next word blotted out).
10 **To**] alt. from *in.*

Opresse thou dost and hast off hym no cure :
Nor yett my plaint no pitie can procure :
Fiers tygre fell, hard rok withowt recure
Cruell rebell to love. 16

Ons may thou love never belovffd agayne ;
So love thou still and not thy love obtayne ;
So wrathfull love, with spites of just disdayne
May thret thy cruell hert. 20

(Signed with interlaced letters "T V.")

13 **cure**] alt. from *ruth.*
14 **plaint**] *woos* alt. to *deth,* then alt. as in text.
16 **rebell**] alt. from *unkynd.*
17 **Ons . . . love**] alt. from *myghtst thou so love.*
18 **So love . . . obtayne**] alt. from *myghtst thou so love and never more attayne.*
19 **So wrathfull**] alt. from *myght wrathfull love so threte you with disdayn.*
20 **May thret . . . hert**] alt. from *thy cruelty to prove.*
Nos. 10–12 are found only in the E. MS.

## 13

### I

So feble is the threde that doth the burden stay 1
Of my pore lyff. In hevy plyght that fallyth in dekay
That but it have elles where some aide or some socours,
The runyng spyndell of my fate anon shall end his cours;
Ffor sins thunhappy howre that did me to depart 5
From my swete wele, one only hope hath staide my lyff apart;
Wych doth perswade such wordes unto my sory mynd:
Mayntene thy sellff o wofull spryte some better luk to fynd:
For tho thou be depryffd from thy desyerd syght, 9
Who can the tell iff thi retorne be for thy most delyght?

The words, *Out of Spain*, are written at the head of this poem, fol. 67a. The whole written and corrected in Wiat's hand. The corrections are such as occur in the first draft of a poem, in the process of composition.

*Variants of the Text.*

2 **hevy**] alt. from *sory*.
**in dekay**] alt. from *wt his sway*.
3 **elles**] first reading *from elles; from* crossed out, and *some* inserted after *or*.
6 **staide**] alt. from *held*.
7 **wych**] alt. from *that*.
**such wordes**] alt. from first *wt such lik wordes*.
**sory**] alt. from *wofull*.

*Variants in A, D, and T.*

5 **Ffor . . . that**] D. omits. In the E. MS. the double *f* is crossed by a thicker stroke than usual, but the word is not obliterated.
7 **sory**] A, T. *sored*.
10 **most**] A, T. *more*.

Or who can tell thy losse, if thou ons maist recover
Some plesant howre thy wo may wrape and the defend and cover?
This is the trust that yet hath my lyff sustaynid; 13
And now, alas, I se it faint, and I by trust ame trainid.

II

The tyme doth flete, and I perceyve thowrs how thei bend 15
So fast, that I have skant the space to marke my comyng end.
Westward, the sonne from out thest skant doth show his lyght,
When in the west he hyds hym straite within the darke of nyght;
And coms as fast where he began his path a wrye 19
From est to west, from west to thest so doth his jornei ly.

*Variants of the Text.*

11 **ons maist**] tr. from original reading.
15 **flete**] alt. from *passe.*
18 **straite**] alt. from *sellff.*
19 **as fast**] alt. from *agayne.*
20 **jornei**] alt. from *viage.*

*Variants in A, D, and T.*

11 **Ons maist**] A, T. tr. *is.* D. *ons must.*
13 **This is . . . that yet hath**] A. *this . . . as yet that hath.* T. *Thus in this trust as yet it hath.*
14 **And now**] A, T. *but now.*
**and I**] D. omits *I.*
15 **perceyve thowrs how thei bend**] D, A. *perceyve the howres . . . bend.* T. *se how the howers do bend.*
17 **thest skant doth show**] A. *the Easte doth scautlye shewe.*
18 **When**] A. *butt.*
19 **where he**] D. omits *he.*
20 **to thest**] A. *to easte.*

The lyff so short, so fraile, that mortall men lyve here,
So gret a whaite, so hevy charge the body that we bere;
That when I thinke apon the distance and the space 23
That doth so far devid me from my dere desird face,
I know not how tattayne the winges that I require,
To lyfft my whaite that it myght fle to folow my desyre;
Thus off that hope, that doth my lyff some thing sustayne 27
Alas I fere and partly fele full litill doth remayne.

III

Eche place doth bryng me grieff wher I do not behold 29
Those lyvely Iyes wich off my thoughtes were wont the kays to hold.
Those thowghtes were plesaunt swete whilst I enioyd that grace:
My plesure past, my present payne wher I might well embrace;
But for becawse my want shold more my wo encresse, 33
In wache, in slepe, both day and nyght, my will doth never cesse

*Variant of the Text.*

32 wher] alt. from *that.*

*Variants in A, D, and T.*

22 body] A, T. *bodies.*
26 To . . . it myght fle] A. *To . . . I might flye.* T. *To lift me up that I might flie.*
27 that doth . . . sustayne] A. *As yet that doth my lyf sustayne.*
28 fele] D. MS. spelling *fle.*
30 lyvely] A. *lovely.*
32 wher] A, T. *when.*
well embrace] D. omits *well.*

That thing to wishe wheroff, sins I did lese the syght
I never saw the thing that myght my faythfull hert delyght.
Th unesy lyff I lede doth teche me for to mete 37
The flowdes, the sees, the land and hilles, that doth them entremete
Twene me and those shining lyghtes, (that wontyd to clere
My darke panges off clowdy thowghtes) as bryght as Phebus spere;
It techith me also what was my plesant state, 41
The more to fele by such record how that my welth doth bate.

IV

If such record alas provoke thenflamid mynd, 43
Wich sprang that day that I did leve the best of me behynd;
If love forgett hym sellff by length of absence let,
Who doth me guyd, O wofull wrech, unto this baytid net

*Variants of the Text.*

37 **Thunesy**] MS. spelling *thunsesy.*
44 **wich**] alt. from *that.*

*Variants in A, D, and T.*

35 **sins**] D. omits.
36 **I . . . delyght**] T. *Was neve thing that mought in ought my wofull her delight.* A. *night* for *myght.*
38 **and hilles**] T, A. *the hilles.*
39 **shining**] T. *shene.*
**to clere**] A. T. *for to clere.*
40 **darke**] A, T. *darked.*
**spere**] MS. spelling for *sphere.* A. *spheare.*
44 **that day**] A. *the day.*
46 **doth**] A *did.*

Where doth encresse my care? Much better were for me 47
As dome as stone, all thing forgott, still absent for to be.
Alas the clere crystall, the bryght transparant glas,
Doth not bewray the colour hyd wich underneth it has,
As doth thaccomberd sprite thowghtfull throws discover 51
Off fiers delyght of fervent love that in our hertes we cover;
Owt by thes Iyes it shewth, that evermore delyght
In plaint and teres to seke redresse, and that both day and nyght.

V

Thes new kyndes of plesurs wherein most men reioyse 55
To me thei do redowble still off stormye syghes the voyce;
Ffor I ame one of them whom plaint doth well content:
It sittes me well, myn absent welth meseems me to lament,

*Variants of the Text.*

48 all thing forgott still] alt. from *to think on nought and.*
50 bewray] alt. from *declare.*
54 and that both day] alt. from *and seke both day.*
55 most] alt. from *all.*

*Variants in A, D, and T.*

48 forgott] A. *forgeat.*
49 the bryght transparant] A. *that bright transplendant.* T. *the bright transplendant.*
50 colour] T. *colours.*
51 thowghtfull] A. *now thoughtfull.* T. *the thoughtfull.*
54 and teres . . . and that] A. *of teares . . .* T, A. *and eke.*
55 Thes . . . reioyse] A. *These . . . kynde . . . rejoyce.* $T_1$. *these* ($T_2$. *those*) *kindes of pleasures most wherein men so rejoyce.*
57 One of them] A. *one of those.*
58 meseems me] A, T. *meseems for.*

And with my teris for to' assay to charge myn
Iyes tweyne, 59
Lyke as myn hert above the brink is frawtid full of
pa[yne];
And for bycawse therto, off those fayre Iyes to trete,
Do me provoke, I shall retorne my plaint thus to
repete.
Ffor there is nothing elles that towches me so within 63
Where thei rule all, and I alone nowght but the
cace or skyn.
Wherfore I do retorne to them, as well or spryng,
From whom descendes my mortal wo above all othr
thing.
So shall myn Iyes in payne accompanie myn hert, 67
That were the guydes that did it lede of love to
fele the smert.

VI

The cryspid gold that doth sormount Apollos pryd 69
The lyvely stremes of plesaunt sterres that under it
doth glyd;

*Variants of the Text.*

60 **Lyke as**] alt. from *sins that.*

pa[yne] A, D, T. *payne;* the cutting down of the MS. has removed some final letters, *pa* visible.

*Variants in A, D, and T.*

59 **for to' assay**] A. *to geve essay.*
60 **myn**] A, T. *my.*
62 **I shall**] T. *I wyll.*
63 **towches . . . within**] A, T. *toucheth,* later edition of T. *so toucheth me within.*
64 This line not in the original Italian, but found elsewhere in Petrarch, and in the "Paradiso," I. 21.
65 **I do**] T. *I shall.*

Where in the bemes off love doth still encrese their hete
Wich yet so farre towch me so nere in cold to make me swet(e);
The wise and plesaunt talk, so rare or elles alone, 73
That did me gyve the courtese gyfft that such had never none,
Be ferre from me, alas; and every other thing,
I myght forbere with better will, than that that did me bryng
With plesant word and clere, redresse of lingerd payne, 77
And wontyd offt in kendlid will to vertu me to trayne.
Thus ame I dryven to here and herken affter news
My comfort skant my large desire in dowtfull trust renews.

VII

And yet with more delyght, to mone my wofull cace, 81
I must complaine those handes, those armes, that fermely do embrace

*Variants of the Text.*

72 **swet(e)**] final *e* cut away from margin.
74 **that such**] alt. from *that erst.*
75 **Be ferre**] alt. from *Ar ferre.*
77 **lingerd**] original word blotted out.
78 **in kendlid . . . to vertu**] alt. from *with kendlid . . . in vertu.*
80 **renews**] part of final *s* cut away.

*Variants in A, D, and T.*

71 **doth still**] A. *doth so.* T. *doe styll.*
72 **towch me**] D. omits *me.*
74 **That did . . . none**] A, T. *That gave to me the curtiest (curteis* T.*) gift that erst had never none.*
76 **than . . . bryng**] D. *than that I did me bryng.* A. *then it that did me bringe.* T. *then this that dyd me bryng.*
77 **lingerd**] D. *linger.*
78 **And wontyd**] A. *whiche wonted.*
81 **mone**] alt. from *playne.*

Me from my sellff, and rule the sterne of my pore lyff.
The swete disdaynes, the plesant wraths, and eke the lovely stryff
That wontid well to tune, in tempre just and mete 85
The rage that offt did make me erre by furour undiscrete.
All this is hid me fro with sharp and craggyd hilles;
At othrs wyll my long abode, my diepe dispaire fulfilles.
But if my hope somtyme rise up by some redresse, 89
It stumbleth strait, for feble faint, my fere hath such excesse.
Such is the sort off hope, the lesse for more desyre,
Wherby I fere, and yet I trust, to se that I requyre,
The restyng place of love where vertu lyves and grose, 93
Where I desire my wery lyff may sometyme take repose.

*Variants of the Text.*

85 **well**] alt. from *oft.*
88 **At . . . fulfilles**] alt. from *my faynting hope my brytill lyf welling dispaire.*
92 **Wherby I fere**] alt. from *And yet I trust.*
94 **may sometyme take repose**] *Also* was inserted before *may* and *all* written over *some;* thus reading: *also may all tyme take repose;* the original is to be preferred.

*Variants in A, D, and T.*

83 **the sterne**] D. *the streme.*
86 **The rage**] *D. the charge.*
87 **me fro**] T. *fro me.*
**craggyd**] A. *craggie.*
88 an original line.
**At**] T. *as.*
92 **Wherby . . . trust**] T. *and yet I trust ere that I dye.*
93 **lyves and grose**] T. *dwelles and growes.*
94 **Where**] T. *There.*
**may sometyme**] A, T. *sometime may.*

*Note.*—St. VII is very beautiful in the original; the translation does not do it justice.

VIII

My song, thou shalt ataine to fynd that plesant place 95
Where she doth lyve, by whome I lyve; may chaunce thou have this grace:
When she hath red, and seene the dred where in I sterve,
Bytwene her brestes she shall the put, there shall she the reserve.
Then tell her that I come, she shall me shortly se, 99
If that for whayte the body fayle, this sowle shall to her fle.

(Signed with interlaced letters "T V.")

*Variants of the Text.*

96 **may . . . grace**] alt. from *perchaunce she shew this grace.*
99 **Then . . . se**] original line *Then say I come for here I may not tary.*

*Variants in A, D, and T.*

96 **thou have this grace**] A, T. *to have this grace.*
97 **the dred**] T. *the grief.*
**where in I sterve**] A, T. *wherein I serve.*
98 **she the reserve**] D. *se the reserve.*
99 **that I come**] D. *I come.*
100 **If that**] A, T. *And if.*
**this sowle**] A, T *the soule.*

## 14

### Iopas' Song

When Dido festid first the wandryng Trojan knyght, 1
Whom Juno's wrath with stormes did force in Lybyke sandes to lyght;
That myghty' Atlas did teche; the soupor lastyng long,
With cryspid lokkes, on golden harpe, Iopas sang in his song:

Iopas sings of the Ptolemaic theory of the heavens,

That same, quod he, that we the world do call and name, 5
Off hevin and yerth with all contentes, it is the very frame;
Or thus, off hevinly powrs, by more power kept in one
Repugnant kyndes, in myddes of whome the yerth hath place alone,

*The World,*

This poem affords a striking example of the deterioration of the text in Tottel's version. The fragment is written in Wiat's hand, and is evidently the first draft, for there are many alterations in the making.

*Variants in the MS.*

2 lyght] final *t* cut away.
4 on] alt. from *and*.
8 repugnant] alt. from *the diverse*.
alone] last three letters cut away from margin.

*Variants in A, T.*

3 did teche] A, T. *taught*.
4 his song] T. omits *his*.

Firme, round, off living thynges, the moder place and nourse; 9
Withowt the wych, in egall whaight, this hevin doth hold his course,
And it is calld by name, the first moving hevin;
The firmament is next containing other sevyn.

Off hevinly powrs that same is plantid full and thikk 13
*The stars* of the *firmament,* As shyning lyghtes wych we call sterres, that therin cleve and stikk.
With great swifft sway the first, and with his restles sours
Caryth it sellff, and all those eight, in evin continuall cours.

And off this world so rownd with in that rollyng case, 17
There be two pointes that never move but fermely kepe ther pla(ce);

*Variants in the MS.*

12 **The firmament . . . sevyn**] alt. from *the sterry skye under the wich thre moveth other sevyn.* So also in l. 2.
15 **the first**] alt. from *the hevyn.*
**restles sours**] alt. from *restles recours.*
16 **eight**] alt. from *sevyn.*
18 **two**] *ii* in the MS.
**pla(ce)**] final *ce* cut away.

*Variants in A, T.*

9 **moder**] A, T. *mother.*
11 **moving**] A, T. *and moving.*
12 **next**] A, T. *placed next.*
18 **There be two pointes**] A, T. *Two points there be.*

*The Poles,*

The tone we se alway, the tothr stondes obiect
Against the same, deviding just the round by line direct;
Wich by ymagination draune from ton to tothr, 21
Towchith the centre of the yerth, for way ther is no nothr.
And thes bene calld the poles, discribd by sterres not bryght,
Artyke the tone northward we se, Antartyke tothr hight.

The lyne that we devise from ton to tothr so 25

*The Axell,*

As Axell is, apon the wich thevins abowt doth go;
Wich of water, nor yerth, of ayre, nor fyre, have kynd.
Therfore the substance of those same were herd for man to fynd.

*Variant in the MS.*

19 **obiect**] alt. from *direct.*

*Wiat's correction.*

24 **northward we se**] alt. for *that we do se.*
26 **thevins**] alt. to *thewin.* (2) alt. to *the hole.* (3) as in text.

*Variants in A, T.*

20 **round**] A, T. *ground.*
21 **ton to tothr**] A, T. *the one to thother.*
22 **Towchith . . . no nothr**] A, T. *touche none other.*
23 **bene . . . discribd**] A, T. *be . . . discryde.*
25 **ton to tothr**] A, T. *thone to thothr.*
26 **thevins abowt doth go**] A, T. *the heavens about do go.*
28 **herd**] i. e. *hard.*

But thei ben uncorrupt, symple and pure unmixt, 29

The *motions* of the Spheres,

And, so we say, bene all those sterrys that in those same bene fixt:
And eke those wandryng sevin, in cyrcles as thei stray,
So calld by cawse against that first thei have repugnant way.

And smaller by ways to, skant sensible to man, 33
To busy work for my pore harp let sing them he that can.
The widest saff the first, off all thes nyne above,
On hunderd yere doth aske of space for on degre to move.
Off wich degres we make, in the first moving hevin, 37
Thre hunderd and thre skore in partes justly devided evin.
And yet ther is anothr by twene those hevins tow
Whose moving is so sli, so slake, I name it not for now.

*Wiat's corrections.*

29 **But thei ben**] alt. from *ffor it is.*
35 **saff**] Wiat's spelling for *save.*
36 **On**] Wiat's spelling for *one.*
40 **so sli, so slake**] alt. from *so slow to preve.*
**now**] note spelling *tow* in previous line to rhyme with *now.*

*Variants in A. and T.*

30 **bene fixt**] T. *be flxt.*
31 **wandryng . . . cyrcles**] A, T. *erring . . . circle.*
35 **nyne**] T. *mine* (evident misprint).

The sevent hevyn, or the shell, next to the sterry skye 41
All those degres that gaderth up with agid pas so slye;

*Of Saturn,*

And doth performe the same, as elders compt hath bene,
In nyne and twenty yeres complet, and days almost sixtene,
Doth cary in his bowght the sterr of Saturne old,
A thretner of all lyving thinges with drought and with his cold.

The sixt whom this containes doth staulk with yonger pase, 47
And in twelff yere doth sum what more than tothrs viage wase;

*Of Jupiter and Mars,*

And this in it doth bere the sterre of Jove benigne,
Twene Saturnes malice and us men, frendly deffending signe.

*Wiat's corrections.*

41 **sevent**] i. e. *seventh.*
**next to the sterry**] version (1) *that meveth under that;* (2) *inder that firmanent;* finally alt. as in text.
44 **complet**] inserted.
46 **and with**] alt. from *and eke.*
48 **viage**] alt. from *jorney.*
50 **frendly deffending**] alt. from *defence and frendly.*

*Variants in A. and T.*

48 **tothrs**] A. *th'others.* T. *thothers.*
49 **in it doth bere**] A. *is it that beares.*

The fift berth blody Mars, that in three hunderd days
And twise elefn, with on full yere hath finisht all those ways.

A yere doth aske the fourt, and houres therto six, 53
And in the same the day his Iye the sonne therin he stix.
The third that governd is by that, that governth me :
And love for love and for no love, provokes, as offt we se.
In like space doth performe that course that did the tothr
So doth the next to the same that second is in order.

of the *Sun*, the *Moon*, and *Mercury*.

*Wiat's corrections.*

51 first version, *The fift hath cruell Mars that meveth all this warre.*
53 **A yere**] alt. from *the yere.*
**houres therto**] tr. in first reading.
58 **So doth**] alt. from *And so doth.* Note ll. 57–58 form a six-foot couplet. l. 58 contains a trisyllable for the third foot. *Order* rhymes with *tothr*, which is normally regarded as one syllable throughout this text.

*Variants in A. and T.*

51 **berth**] A, T. *bears.*
54 **the day his Iye . . . he stix**] T. *the dayes eie . . . her styckes.*
55 **governth**] A, T. *governs.*
58 **to the same**] A, T. *unto the same.*

At the foot of the MS. page, below l. 52, is a couplet, hardly discernible, written small in Wiat's hand—

"Nor is it lyk that ma(n) may think thes sterrs all
Streys their path as thei do passe w$^{th}$(in) that hevinly hall . . ."

Is it a challenge to the (new) Copernican theory?

But it doth bere the stern that calld is Mercury
That mayni a craffty secret stepp doth tred, as calcars try.

That skye is last and first next us; those ways hath gone 61
In sevin and twenty comon days, and eke the third of one;
And beryth with his sway the diverse mone abowt,
Now bryght, now browne, now bent, now full, and now her lyght is owt.

Thus have they of their owne two movinges all those sevin; 65

The two motions of the Spheres.

One: wherin thei be carid still eche in his severall hevin;
An othr: of hym sellffes where their bodis ben layd
In by ways, and in lesser rowndes, as I afore have sayd

*Wiat's correction.*

65 **Thus have . . . owne**] alt. from *Thus have they of them sellffes.*

*Variants in A. and T.*

61 **first next us**] A, T. *flxt next us.*
64 **owt**] final *t* cut away in MS.
65 **those**] A, T. *these.*
**of hym sellffes**] A, T. *of themselves.*
**ben**] A, T. *be.*

Saff of them all, the sonne doth stray lest from the straight, 69
The sterry sky hath but on course, that we have calld the eight.
And all these moving eight ar ment from west to thest,
Altho thei seme to clymb alofft, I say, from est to west.

But that is but by force of the first moving skye, 73
In twise twellff howres from est to thest that caryth them bye and bye.
But mark me well also: these movinges of these sevin
Be not about that axell tre of the first moving hevin;
For thei have theire two poles directly tone to tothr . . . 77

*Wiat's correction.*

72 **alofft**] alt. from *thevin* (i. e. the heaven).

*Variants in A, and T.*

69 **lest**] A. *still.*
71 **moving**] A, T. *movinges.*
74 **est to thest**] A. *east to east.* T. *east to west.*
75 **me . . . these sevin**] A, T. *we.* A. *the seven.*
76 **about**] MS. *a bout.*
**that**] A, T. *the.*
77 **tone to tothr**] A. *to the t'other.* T. *tone to the tother.* The MS. ends here. The probable reason why the song should never have been finished is Wiat's sudden death. See notes for the popularity of the Ptolemaic conception of the heavens, and its relation to man, as the *Macrocosme* to the *Microcosme.* The Copernican theory was just beginning to be known, and it was on account of the antipathy to the new idea that so many popular and scientific treatises and poems were issued about this time. The fragment is a striking proof of Wiat's participation in the general tendencies of his day.

## PARAPHRASE OF PSALMS

### *Noli Emulare in Maligna* * Ps. 37.

Altho thou se thowtragius clime aloft, 1
Envie not thowe his blinde prosperitie;
The welth of wretches tho it semeth soft,

Move not thye hert by theyre felicitye. 4
2 They shalbe found like grasse turnd into hay,
And as the herbes that wither sodenlye.

3 Stablisshe thy trust in God, seke right allway, 7
And on the yerth thowe shalte inhabite longe;
Ffede and encrease such hope from day to day,

4 And, if with God thow time thy hartie songe, 10
He shall the give what soo thy hart can lust.
Cast uppon God thy will that ryght thy wrong,

5 Gyve him the charge, for he upright and just, 13
Hath cure of the and of thy cares all;
6 And he shall make thy trowgh to be discust

* ll. 1–36. This first portion only is in the E. MS. owing to missing pages; the text of A. is faulty, partial lines left incomplete, and two whole lines omitted (ll. 70–71).

**Noli Emulare in Maligna**] This is the title of the Paraphrase in the E. MS.

Figures in the left margin denote the vv. of the Psalter as indicated in the MS.

1 **thowtragius**] A. *th'owtragious.* v. 1. The Great Bible reads: "Fret not thyself at the *ungodly.*" The 1530 Psalter reads: "Frete not thyselve with theis *kursid harmfull men.*" This is Wiat's probable source.

4 **theyre felicitye**] inserted in Wiat's hand.

14 **and of**] A. *and eke of.*

Upright as the sone, and thy ryghtwisnes shall 16
(The cursids welth tho now do it deface)
Shine like the daylight that we the none call.

7 Paciently abide the Lordes assured grace; 19
Bere with even minde the trouble that he sendes;
Dismay the not, tho thou se the purchase

Encresse of some, for suche like lucke God sendes 22
To wicked folke—[so prosper the untrue;].
8 Restrayne thy mind from wrath that ay offendes,

Do way all rage, and se thou do estewe 25
By theire like dede, suche dedes for to committ;
9 For wikked folke theire overthrow shall rewe.

Who patientlie abid and do not flitt, 28
They shall possede the world from heire to hayre;
The wikked shall of all his welth be quitt

10 So sodainly, and that without repaire, 31
That all his pompe and his straung aray
Shall from thyn Iye departe as blast of ayre.

11 The sobre thene the world shall weld, I say, 34
And live in welth and pes so plentifull.
12 Him to distroy the wikked shall assay,

16 as] MS. *att.*

17] an interpolation of Wiat's not in the Bible version.

18 none] *i. e. noon.* A. *moone.* Cf. v. 6: "Yee he shal make thy righteousnesse as cleare as the lyght, and thy iuste dealynge as the noone day."

19–23] the 1530 Psalter reads, v. 7, "Be not angry with hym that prosper in his way, which is the man that is geven to desayte." The completion of l. 23 is to bring out the sense of *prosper in his waye.*

24] 1530 Psalter: "Restraine thy selfe from wrath."

25] 1530 Psalter: "Let thy anger be blowne ov^r."

29 heire to hayre] MS. spelling *hayre* is made to conform with *repayre.*

*And gnashe his teeth with groninge yrefull; 37
13 The Lord shall scorn the threatninges of the wretche;
For He doeth know the tyde is nigh at full
When he shall syncke, and no hande shall him seeche. 40
14 They have unsheathed eke their bloudye brands,
And bent theire bowe, to prove if they might reache
To overthrowe the [just; stretched forth their honds,] 43
Bare of relief the harmelesse to devour.
15 The sword shall pearce the hart of such that fonds;
Their bowe shall breake in their moste endevour. 46
16 A little livinge gotten rightfullie,
Passeth the richesse and eke the highe power
Of that that wretches have gatherd wickedlye. 49
17 Perish shall the wickedes posteritie;
And God shall stablishe the just assuredlye.
18 The just mans dayes the Lorde doeth know & se, 52
Theire heritage shall last for evermore,
And of theire hope beguylde they shall not be.
19 When dismold dayes shall wrappe the tother sore, 55
They shall be full when other faynte for foode,
20 Ther whylst shall fail theise wicked men therfore.

* 37 The fragment in E. ends here owing to a missing page. It is continued from the A. MS.

with] A. has *eke with*, *eke* is redundant.

39 **For . . . full**]. The 1530 Psalter: "because he seithe his daye of judgement at the hande."

41–44] The 1530 Psalter reads: "The ungodly shal drawe out their swerdes and thei shal bende their bowes to smite downe the poore kareful afflicte, and to slaie the right treders in the waye."

43 **To overthrowe the**] the line is unfinished, the completed line is added from the context of the 1530 Psalter.

48 **the highe power**] A. *eke the high power*.

57 **theise wicked men**] cf. rendering of v. 1. in 1530 Psalter.

To Gods enemyes suche end shalbe alowd, 58
As hath lambs grece wastinge in the fyre,
That is consumde into a smoking clowd.

21 Boroweth the unjust withoute will or desyre 61
To yelde agayne; the just frelye doeth give
Where he seeth nede, as mercye doeth requyre.

22 Who willeth Hym well for right therfore shall live; 64
Who banysshe Hym shall be rooted awaye;
23 His steppes shall God directe still and relieve

And please Hym shall what lyff hym list assaye. 67
24 And tho he fall, under fote lye shall not he;
Catchinge his hand for God shall streight hym staye.

Nor yet his seede foodeles, sene for to be.

26 The just to all men mercyfull hath bene, 73
Busye to do well; therfore his seede I say
Shall have habundaunce all waye freshe and grene.

27 Flee yll, do good, that thou maist last allwaye; 76
28 For God doeth love for evermore the uprighte:
Never his chosen doeth he cast awaye;

59 lambs . . . fyre] Bible version: "Yee eve as the smoke shal they consume."
61 Boroweth] A. spelling, *borrow'th th'unjust.* The text follows Wiat's usual rendering.
ll. 70–71 omitted from A, and contained in no other MS. The Bible version, v. 25, reads, "I have been young and now am old, yet saw I never the rightwise forsaken, nor his seed to seke for bread."

For ever he them myndeth daye and night, 79
And wicked seede alwaye shall waste to nought:
29 The just shall welde the world as their own right:

And longe thereon shall dwell as they have wrought. 82
30 With wisdom shall the wyse mans mouth him able;
His tong shall speke alwaye even as it ought;

31 With Gods lerninge he hath his hert stable; 85
His foote therfore from slydinge shall be sure.
32 The wicked watcheth the just for to disable,

And for to see him doeth his busy cure 88
33 But God will not suffer him for to quaile
By tyrannye, nor yet, by faulte unpure,

To be condemned in judgement without faile. 91
34 Awayte therfore the coming of the Lorde,
Live with His lawes in patience to prevayle,

And He shall raise thee of thyne owne accorde. 94
Above the erth, in suretie to beholde
The wickedes deth, that thou may it recorde

35 I have well sene the wicked shene lyke golde, 97
Lustye and grene as Lawrell lasting aye,
But evyn anow and scant his seate was colde,

When I have past agayne the self same waye 100
Wher he did raigne, he was not to be founde,
Vanyshd he was for all his freshe arraye.

36 Let uprightnes be still thy stedfast grounde, 103
Ffollowe the right : suche one shall alwaye fynde
Hym self in peace and plentye to habounde;

37 All wicked folke reversyd shall [be] untwynde, 106
And wretchednes shall be the wickedes ende,
38 Helthe to the juste from God shall be assignde,

He shall them strengthe whom troble shoulde offend; 109
39 The Lord shall help I say and them delyver
From cursed hondes, and helthe unto them send,
For that in Hym they sett their truste for ever.

106] The 1530 Psalter : "At the laste the ungodly shalbe kut awaye."
untwynde] *be* is required before *untwynde* (i. e. *untinde*, meaning "lost," "brought to nought."

FACSIMILE TITLE-PAGE OF THE 1549 EDITION

REPRODUCED FOR THE 1807 EDITION

*Brit. Mus.*]

[*To face p.* 208, *Vol. I.*

truste for ever.

CERTAYNE PSALMES chosen out of the Psalter of David commonlye called thee. vii. penytentiall Psalmes, drawen into englyshe meter by Sir Thomas Wyat knyght, whereunto is added a prologe of the auctore before every psalme, very pleasant and profettable to the godly reader.

IMPRINTED at London in Paules Church yarde at the sygne of thee Starre, By Thomas Raynald, and John Harrington.

## THE PENITENTIAL PSALMS

### H. S.

The great Macedon that out of Persë chasyd 1
Darius, of whose huge power all Asy rang,
In the riche arke of Homers rymes be placyd,
Who fayned gestes of Hethen Prynces sang.

What holly grave, what wourthy sepulture, 5
To Wyates Psalmes shuld Christians then purchase?
When he dothe paynte the lyvely fayths, and pure:
The stedfast hoope the swete returne to grace

Of just Davyd, by parfite penytence; 9
Where Rewlers may se in a myrrour clere
The bitter frewte of false concupiscense,
From Jewry bought Uryas deathe full dere.

In Prynces hartes goddes scourge yprynted depe 13
Myght them awake out of their synfull slepe.

This sonnet is written in the MS. as a preface to the Penitential Psalms, and is headed by the interlaced initials "H. S," for Henry Howard, Earl of Surrey. In the left-hand margin are the initials "I. H." for John Harington, the editor of the 1549 edition of the Psalms.

## FIRST PROLOGUE

Love to gyve law unto his subject hertes 1
Stode in the Iyes of Barsabe the bryght,
And in a look anone hymsellff convertes
Cruelly plesant byfore Kyng David syght;
First dasd his Iyes, and forder forth he stertes 5
With venemd breth, as sofftly as he myght,
Towcht his sensis, and over ronnis his bonis
With creping fyre, spasplid for the nonis.

And when he saw that kendlid was the flame 9
The moyst poyson in his hert he launcyd,
So that the sowle did tremble with the same
And in this brawle as he stode and trauncyd

*Prologue.*

**First Prologue**] The 1807 copy of Percy and Stevens reads: "The Prologue of the Auctor" evidently copied from the 1549 edition.

*Note.*—Reference to PC. = 1549 edition.
Reference to PS. = 1807 edition.

The Psalms are written and corrected (evidently at the same sitting) in Wiat's own hand.

1 **subject**] A. *subjectes.* 1557 edition *subjectes.*
2 **Barsabe**] PS. *Batsabé.* MS. omits initial capital.
4 **David**] A. *Davides.*
5 **dasd**] A. *David.*
6 **venemd**] alt. from *poyson.*
7 **Towcht his sensis**] PS. *Touches his senew.*
**over ronnis**] A. *over ranne.* PS. *overrunnes.*
8 **creping**] alt. from *spasplyd.*
**spasplid**] A. *sparkeld.* PS. *sparkeled.*
10 **moyst**] alt. from *warme.* PC. *noysome.*
**he launcyd**] A. omits *he.*
12 **and tràuncyd**] so PC. PS. *entraunced.*

*Prologue* 1.

Aretino's version begins: "Standosi Amore a dar legge alle persone gentili ne gli occhi di Bersabe si transformo in uno sguardo crudelmente pietoso, e trapassato al re David prima gli abba glio la vista, poi gli spiro in bocca dal suo veneno. . . ."

Yelding unto the figure and the frame 13
  That those fayre Iyes had in his presense glauncid
The forme that love had printyd in his brest
He honorth it as thing off thinges best.

So that forgott the wisdome and fore cast, 17
  (Wych wo to Remes when that thes kynges do lakk)
Forgettyng eke Goddes maiestie as fast,
  Ye, and his own : forthwith he doth to mak
Urye to go in to the feld in hast; 21
  Urye, I say, that was his Idolles mak;
Under pretence off certen victorye,
For enmy's swordes a redy pray to dye.

Wherby he may enjoy her out of dowt 25
  Whom more then God or hymsellff he myndyth;
And after he had browght this thing abowt,
  And off that lust posest hym sellff, he fyndyth

15 **The forme . . . brest]** alt. from *The forme wherof love printyd in his brest.*
16 **honorth]** A. *honoreth.*
  **as thing]** A. *as a thing.*
17 **the wisdome and fore cast]** alt. from *and out of mynde clene cast.*
18 **thes kynges]** PS. *the king.* A. *this kinges do lack.*
  **do]** MS. *doth.*
20 **forthwith]** alt. from *honoure.*
21 **Urye . . . feld]** alt. from *under pretence of victorye.*
22 **Urye I say]** alt. from *Urye to go.*
  **Idolles]** PS. *jeweles.*
24 **enmy's]** A. *enmyes.* PS. inserts *the*, with this note, "sic MSS.," but *for* is overwritten the original first word of the line, this word ending in *y*, which PS. has taken for *the.* The apostrophe is extremely rare in Wiat's text.
  **to dye]** PS. *to be.*
25 **out of dowt]** alt. from *all alone.*
26 alt. from *Whom he doth love more than hymself or God.*
28 **And off that lust]** alt. from *And off this delyght.*

That hath, and doeth reverse, and clene torn owt 29
  Kynges from kyndomes, and cytes undermyndyth;
He blyndyd thinkes this trayne so blynd & closse
To blynd all thing that nowght may it disclosse.

But Nathan hath spyd owt this trecherye, 33
  With rufull chere and settes afore his face
The gret offence, outrage, and Iniurye
  That he hath done to God as in this case,
By murder for to clok Adulterye. 37
  He showth hym ek from hevyn the thretes, alas,
So sternly sore this prophet, this Nathan,
That all amasid this agid wooful man,

Lyke hym that metes with horrour and with fere, 41
  The hete doth strayt forsake the lymms cold:
The colour eke drowpith down form his chere;
  So doth he fele his fyer maynifold
His hete, his lust, and plesur, all in fere
  Consume and wast: and strayt his crown of gold,

30 **from**] alt. from *and*.
  **undermyndyth**] i. e. *undermineth*.
31 **this trayne**] A. *his trayne*.
32 **thing**] PS. *thinges*.
  **disclosse**] MS. spelling *disclosse*; also *close* (31).
34 **settes**] A. *set*.
38 **hym**] PS. omits.
  **from**] alt. from *how*.
  **thretes**] alt. from *sore*.
40 **this agid wooful man**] so PC. PS. *was this woful man*.
41 **metes**] A. *mete*.
43 **drowpith**] PC. *droppeth*. Note by PS.
  **chere**] MS. spelling *chre*.
44 **his fyer**] alt. from *the fyer*.
45 **all in fere**] A. *all in fyre*, obscures the meaning, namely, *his pleasure and desire waste away because of his fear*.

His purpull pall his sceptre he lettes fall,
And to the ground he throwth hymsellff with all.

The pompous pryd of state and dygnite 49
  Forthwith rabates repentant humblenes;
Thynner vyle cloth then clothyth poverte
  Doth skantly hyde and clad his nakednes;
His fayre hore berd of reverent gravite, 53
  With ruffled here knowyng his wykednes;
More lyke was he the sellff same repentance,
Then statly prynce off woroldly governance.

His harpe he taketh in hand to be his guyde, 57
  Wherwith he offerth his plaintes, his sowle to save,
That from his hert distilles on evry syde;
  With drawyng hym in to a dark cave
Within the grownd, wherin he myght hym hyde, 61
  Fleing the lyght as in pryson or grave;
In wych as sone as David enterd had,
The dark horrour did mak his fawte a drad.

47 **purpull**] spelt *purpirll*.
51 **Thynner vyle**] alt. from *a thyn cloth*. A. reads *Th' inner vile*.
54 **here**] i. e. *hair*. A. *hears*.
**knowyng his wykednes**] alt. from *repentyng his excesse*.
55 **repentance**] A. *repentante*.
56 **woroldly**] as spelled elsewhere. MS. spelling here *wordly*. A. *worldlye*.
57 **taketh**] A. takes.
58 **his . . . save**] alt. from *the plaintes and the cryes*. PS. omits *his*.
*Note.*—Many of the erasures are made *in the act of composition* before the line is completed, as here, where *cryes* is not a rhyme and is necessarily altered. Such corrections as these are not given throughout; only such as make a complete line in rhyme and rhythm are noticed.
60 **a dark cave**] so MS., but PS. inserts *depe* before *cave*, noting "*sic MSS.*"; but A. alone has *dark deep cave*, not the Egerton, which is the authoritative text.
64 **did mak**] alt. from *mad* (i. e. *made*).
**fawte**] PS. amends to *sowle*, noting "*fawte, sic. PC. and MSS.*"

But he without prolonging, or delay 65
  Of that, that myght his Lord his God apese,
Fallth on his knees, and with his harp I say,
  Afore his brest, frawtyd with disese,
Off stormy syghes, his chere colourd lyk clay, 69
  Dressyd upryght, sekyng to conterpese
His song with syghes, and towching of the strynges,
With tendre hert lo thus to God he synges:

65 **or**] alt. from *of*.
66 **Of that**] alt. from *the thing*.
**that myght**] PS. *whyche myghte*.
67 **Fallth**] A. *falleth*.
68 **frawtyd**] A. *yfraughted*; also PS.
69 **his chere . . . clay**] PS. *depe draughtes of hys decaye*. No authority given by PS. for this change.
70 **sekyng to conterpese**] alt. from *he tunes, his God to plese*.

## FIRST PENITENTIAL PSALM

*Domine ne in furore* Ps. 6.

O Lord sins in my mowth thy myghty name 1
Sufferth it sellff, my Lord to name and call :
Here hath my hert hope taken by the same,

That the repentanc wych I have and shall 4
May at thi hand seke marcy as the thing,
Only comfort of wrechid synners all,

Wherby I dare with humble bymonyng, 7
By thy goodnes of the this thing require :
Chastyse me not for my deserving

According to thy just conceyvid Ire. 10
O Lord, I dred, and that I did not dred
I me repent, and evermore desyre

The, The, to dred. I open here and spred 13
My fawte to thee, but Thou for thi goodnes
Mesure it not in largenes nor in bred

**Domine ne in furore**] copied below the original heading, part of which has disappeared through cutting away the margin.

1 **in**] alt. from *off*.
**mowth**] here spelt *mowght*.
3 **hope taken**] alt. from *caught comfort*.
6 **Only comfort of**] PS. *Of only comfort to*.
8 **of the this thing require**] PS. *this thynge of thee requyre*.
13 **The, the**] A. *thee for*.
**open**] alt. from *knolege*.
15 **Mesure it not**] A. omits *not*.

*Note.*—PS. often alters the text without comment. When the MSS. and PC. are followed, the fact is noted.

*First Penitential Psalm* (*Ps.* vi).

Aretino's version begins : "Signore, poi che il tuo nome si lascia proferire dalla mia lingua e da che tu le concedi che ella possa anchor chiamare il Signor suo, il core, che prende felice augurio percio, favorisce la speranza. . . ."

Punish it not as askyth the grettnes 16
2 Off thi furour provokt by my offence
Tempre O Lord the harme of my excesse

With mendyng will that I for recompense 19
Prepare agayne; and rather pite me,
For I ame weke and clene without defence;

More is the nede I have of remede, 22
For off the hole the Lech takyth no cure;
The shepe that strayth the sheperd sekes to se;

I Lord ame stray'd, I, sek without recure, 25
Fele all my lyms, that have rebelld for fere,
Shake in dispayre, onles thou me assure;

*My flesh is trobled, my hert doth fere the spere; 28
The dred of deth, of deth that ever lastes,
Threteth of ryght, and draweth nere and nere.

3 Moche more, my sowle is trobled by the blastes 31
Of theise assaultes, that come as thick as hayle,
Of worldlye vanytie, that temptation castes

17 my] possibly a slip in MS., as great care is taken to write *myn* before a vowel. PS. *myn*.

19 for recompense] alt. from *prepare agaynst*.

22 More is the nede I have] alt. from *And have more nede of thee*.

24 sekes] alt. from *seketh*.

25 sek] i. e. *sick*. The spelling in Prol. 2 is *sikk*.

26 Fele] alt. from *for*.

27 Shake in dispayre onles . . . assure] alt. from *Shake for despayre if thou me not assure*.

* ll. 28–31 absent from the MS. owing to a torn-out leaf. The Psalm is continued from A., but Wiat's spelling is adopted.

29 The dred] A. *That dred*.

Agaynst the weke bulwarke of the flesshe frayle, 34
Wherin the soule in great perplexite
Feleth the senses, with them that assayle,

Conspyre, corrupt by use and vanyte; 37
Wherby the wretch doeth to the shadowe resorte
Of hope in The, in this extremite.

But thou O Lord, how long after this sorte 40
Fforberest thou to see my myserye;
Suffer me yet, in hope of some comfort,

Ffere, and not fele, that thou forgettest me. 43
4 Return O Lord, O Lord, I thee besech,
Unto thyn olde wonted benignite;

Reduce, revyve, my sowle; be thow the Lech, 46
And reconcyle the great hatred and stryff
That it hath tan agaynst the flesshe; the wretch

That stirred hath thie wrath by fylthye lyff; 49
See how my sowle doeth frete it to the bones,
Inwarde remorse so sharpith it like a knyff.

That but thow help the caitiffe, that bemones 52
His gret offence, it turneth anon to dust.
Here hath thy mercy matter for the nones;

34 PS. omits *weke*.
35 **perplexite**] Wiat's usual spelling for words ending in *-ity*; cf. Prol. 1, ll. 49, 52, 53.
37 **use**] PS. *pleasure*.
38 **shadowe**] PS. *shade*.

For if thy rightuous hand that is so just 55
Suffer no synne, or stryke with dampnacion,
Thyn infinyte mercy want,—nedes it must,—

Subjecte matter for his operacion; 58
5 *For that in deth theris no memorye
Among the dampneyd; nor yet no mencion

Of thy gret name, grownde of all glory. 61
Then if I dye and goo wher as I fere
To thinck theron, how shall thy gret mercy

Sownde in my mowth unto the worldes ere; 64
For ther is none that can the lawde and love
For that thow wilt no love among them there.

Suffer mye cryes thy mercy for to move 67
That wonted is a hundred yeres offence
In momente of repentance to remove.

6 How ofte have I calde up with diligence 70
This slowthfull flesshe, longe afore the day,
For to confesse his fault and negligence,

That to The done, for ought that I cowld say 73
Hath still returnd to shroude itself from cold;
Wherbye it sufferth nowe for suche delay,

55-6 Here and elsewhere in the Psalms there are touches of Calvinistic doctrine.

* 59 It has been considered that the terza-rima chain broke down at l. 58. The fact is, A. missed a line (59) here. It *is to be found in Percy and Stevens's copy*, which was carefully collated *from the MSS. and PC.*

64 **mowth**] Wiat's spelling is *mowght.*

67 **thy mercy**] PS. *the mercy* (probable slip).

69 **In momente**] PS. *In a moment.*

73 **done**] PS. correct to *denne*, and note MS. reading as *done*, and suggest that it means *downe* for *bed of downe*, as in Satire. There is no need to alter the text here, the passage is clear. David has often risen before the day, to offer thanksgiving ; *that duty accomplished*, he has returned slothfully to bed.

By nyghtlye playntes, in stede of pleasures olde, 76
I washe my bed with teres contynuall,
To dull my sight, that it be never bolde
To stirr my hert agayne to suche a fall. 79
7 Thus drye I up among my foes in woo
That with my fall do rise and grow with all
And me bysett even now, where I am so, 82
With secrett trapps to troble my penance.
Som do present to my weping Iyes lo
The chere, the manere bealte, and countenance 85
Off her whose lok alas did mak me blynd;
Sum othr offer to my remembrans
Those plesant wordes now bitter to my mynd; 88
And sum show me the powre of my armor,
Triumph, and conquest; and to my hed assind
Dowble Diademe: sum show the favor 91
Of peple frayle, palais, pompe, & riches;
To these Marmaydes and theyre baytes of error
I stopp myn eris, with help of thy goodnes; 94
And for I fele it comith alone of The,
That to my hert thes foes have non acces

76 nyghtlye playntes] PS. notes, so PS. and MS. read *playntes* as here, but alters to *myghtye paynes*.

79 stirr] PS. alters to *stere*.

80 The 1530 Psalter: "My face is wrinkled and dried up with kare and anger My enymes have made it full thinne with trouble."

81–96 This passage follows Aretino, and is an amplification of the verse "I have so many enymes."

82 bysett] A. *besettes*.

84 Iyes] normal spelling; cf. Prol. l. 2. MS. spelling *Yes*.

85 and] PS. *or*.

92 riches] alt. from *glory*.

95 comith] A. *comes*.

8 I dare them bid; "Avoyd! Wreches and fle! 97
"The Lord hath hard the voyce off my complaynt;
Your engins take no more effect in me.

9 The Lord hath herd I say and sen me faynt 100
Under your hand, and piteth my distres;
He shall do mak my sensis, by constraint,

Obbey the rule that reson shall express, 103
Wher the deceyte of yower glosing baite
Made them usurp a powre in all exces.

10 Shamid be they all that so ly in whaite 106
To compas me, by missing of theire pray;
Shame and rebuke redound to suche decayte.

(Sodayne confusion is stroke withowt delay 109
Shall so defface theire craffty sugestion,
That they to hurt my helth no more assay
Sins I O Lord remayne in thy protection.

(Signed "T V.")

97] v. 8, 1530 Psalter: "Avoide from me ye workers of wikednes, for the Lorde hath harde my depe desyre. The Lorde hath receved my petition."

100 **herd I say and**] alt. from *pited so to se.*

103 **Obbey the rule**] A. *Obaye therefore.*

104 **Wher the**] alt. from *Wherby.*

**of yower**] PS. *of that your.*

**glosing baite**] *baite* alt. from *venem.* A. *glauncynge bayte.*

106 **that so ly in whaite**] PS. *that so do by.* A. *so slye.* The line scans with initial strong stress. 1530 Psalter: "All myn enymes shalbe shamed and astonned: they shall be put to flyght and confounded sodenly."

109 **is**] alt. from *as.* PS. *as.* A. *as*, and *a* crossed out and apostrophe mark inserted. *is* stands for *his* (for the possessive). Other instances occur in the MS.

110 **sugestion**] alt. from *enterprise.*

The A. MS. continues without a break to the second Prologue, *Who so hath sene.*

## SECOND PROLOGUE

Who so hath sene the sikk in his fevour, 1
Affter treux taken with the hete or cold,
And that the fitt is past, his furuour,
Draw faynting syghes; let hym I say behold
Sorowful David, affter his langour, 5
That with the terys, that from his Iyes downrold,
Pausid his plaint and layd adown his harp,
Faythfull record of all his sorows sharp.

It semid now that of his fawt the horrour 9
Did make aferd no more his hope of grace,
The thretes whereoff in horrible errour,
Did hold his hert as in despair a space,
Till he had willd to seke for his socour 13
Hym selff accusing, be knowyng his case,
Thinking so best his Lord for to apese
Eesd, not yet held, he felith his disese.

Second Prologue] PS. *The Auctor.*
1 fevour] alt. from *dolour.*
2 with the hete or cold] alt. from *After the treux taken wt thete or cold.* A. *with heate or with colde.*
3 furuour] MS. spelling *favuour.* PS. *fervour* with note "*sic. MS.*" A. *furour.*
4 let hym I say behold] alt. from *with sobbying multifold.*
6 Iyes] normal spelling here.
11 horrible] A blank left in the MS. after this word, filled in by the word *errour.*
14 beknowyng] alt. from *and knoleging.* A. *by knowing.*
16 Eesd] spelling corrected from *esed.*
not yet held] PS. *and not yet healed* (omit *eesd.*)
he felith] A. *he filleth.*

*Prologue* 2.

Aretino's version begins: "Chi mai ha visto uno infermo subito che egli ha fatto tregua co'l caldo o co'l gelo de gli accidenti suoi. . . .

Semyth horrible no more the darke cave 17
  That erst did make his fault for to tremble;
A place devout, or refuge for to save
  The Socourles, it rather doth resemble;
For who had sene so knele with in the grave 21
  The chieff Pastor of thebrews assemble,
Wold juge it made, by terys of penitence,
A sacred place worthi of reverence.

With vapord Iyes he lokyth here and there, 25
  And when he hath a while hym sellff bethowght,
Gadryng his sprites that were dismayd for fere,
  His harp agayne into his hand he rowght;
Tunyng accord by Jugement of his ere 29
  His hertes botum for a sigh he sowght,
And therewith all apon the holow tre
With strainid voyce agayne thus cryth he:

(Signed "T V.")

17 Initial word *now* crossed out. PS. *nowe seemeth feavefull.*
18 **fault**] PS. alters to *soule.* See also Prol. 1, 64.
**for to tremble**] alt. from *to be advad.*
19 **or refuge**] PS. *of refuge.*
20 **doth**] PS. *dyd.*
21 **For . . . grave**] A. *for who hath sene so knele within a grave.* PS. *For who had sene so kneeling within the grave.* MS. has *hym* inserted after *so*, but it is doubtful, and not the same ink.
22 **thebrews**] PS. *the Hebrewes.* A. *Th'ebrues.*
26 **bethowght**] A. *besought.*
31 **apon**] MS. spelling *apon.*
32 **With . . . he**] alt. from *With lowd voyce lo thus cryth he.* A. *With . . cryethe hee.*

## SECOND PENITENTIAL PSALM

*Beati quorum remisse sunt* Ps. 32.

Oh happy ar they that have forgiffnes gott 1
Off theire offence; (not by theire penitence
As by meryt wych recompensyth not;

Altho that yet pardone hath non offence 4
Withoute the same); but by the goodnes
Off Him that hath perfect intelligens

Off hert contrite, and coverth the grettnes 7
Of syn within a marcifull discharge;
And happy ar they that have the willfullnes

Of lust restraynid afore it went at large, 10
Provokyd by the dred of Goddes furour,
Wherby thei have not on theyre bakes the charge

Of othrs fawte, to suffer the dolour; 13
For that theire fawte was never execute
In opyn syght, example of errour.

2–5] Wiat's parenthesis.
8 **within a marcifull discharge**] alt. from *under the mantell of mercy.*
9 **And**] alt. from *Oh.*
**willfullnes**] written over *forgiff.*
10 **large**] a comma, not a full stop, is inserted here in the MS.
13 **Of . . . dolour**] *of* first changed to *with,* and line read *with others faut examplid theire errour.* corrected as text.
**fawte**] PS. *faultes.*
14 **was never execute**] alt. from *did never it extend.*

*Second Penitential Psalm* (Ps. xxxii).

Aretino's version begins: "O beati coloro le cui iniquita perdonna Iddio, lasciando le impunite non per le opere della contritione ne della penitentia. . . ."

2 And happi is he, to whom God doth impute 16
No more his fawte, by knowleging his syn,
But clensid now the Lord doth hym reput(e),

As adder freshe, new stryppid from his skin, 19
Nor in his sprite is owght undiscoverd.
3 I for by cawse I hidd it still within

Thynking by state in fawte to be preferd, 22
Do fynd, by hyding of my fawte, my harme;
As he that feles his helth to be hinderd

By secret wound, concelid from the charme 25
Of lechis cure, that elles had had redresse;
And fele my bonis consume and wax unfarme

By dayly rage, roring in excesse. 28
4 Thy hevy hand on me was so encrest
Both day and nyght, and held my hert in presse

With priking thowghtes, by reving me my rest; 31
That wytherd is my lustynes a way,
As somer hettes that hath the grene oprest.

17 **fawte**] MS. spelling here *faut.*
19 **freshe, new**] A. *fresh and new.*
20 **owght**] alt. from *nothing.*
21 **I for by cawse**] alt. from *I for that I.*
**I hidd**] A. *I had.*
22 **Thynking . . . preferd**] First word doubtful; alt. from *And for to shew my fawt have bene aferd.*
24 **that feles . . . hinderd**] PS. *that fyndeth his healthe hyndered.*
27 **And**] alt. from *did.*
28 **rage . . . excesse**] alt. from *plaint that I by fere expresse.*
29 **was**] alt. from *hath.*
31 **priking**] alt. from *restles.*
**by reving**] i. e. *bereaving.*

5 Wherfore I did an othr way assay 34
And sowght forthwith to opin in thy syght
My fawt, my fere, my filthines I say;

And not to hide from The my gret unryght, 37
" I shall," quod I, " agaynst my sellff confesse
" Unto the, Lord, all my synfull plyght."

And thou forthwith didst wash the wikkednes 40
Off myn offence; of trowght ryght thus it is.

6 Wherfor they that have tastid thy goodnes

At me shall take example as of this, 43
And pray and seke in tyme, for tyme of grace.
Then shall the stormes and fluddes of harme hym mis

And hym to rech shall never have the space. 46

7 Thow art my refuge, and only save gard;
From the trobles that compasse me, the place.

Suche Joy as he that skapis his enmis ward 49
With losid bondes, hath in his libertie,
Such Joy, my Joy, thou hast to me prepard;

That as the Seman in his jeopertie 52
By soden lyght perceyvid hath the port,
So by thy gret mercifull propertie,

Within thy lok thus rede I my comfort :— 55

8 I shall the tech and gyve understondyng
And poynt to the what way thou shalt resort

37 **from**] alt. from *to*.
45 **stormes**] alt. from *wavis*.
46 **rech**] i. e. *reck*.
49 **Joy**] PS. *joyes*.
51 **Such Joy, my Joy**] PS. *Such is my joye*.
55 **lok**] so MS. PS. *bok*. From the context *lok* is correct. David imagines himself as actually before the Jehovah and learning from His look. See l. 59, *Myn lye shall . . guyde*.

For thi adresse to kepe the from wandryng; 58
Myn Iye shall tak the charge to be thy guyde;
I aske therto of the alone this thing:

9 Be not like horse or mule that man doth ryde, 61
That not alone doth not his master know,
But, for the good thou dost hym, must be tyde

And brydeld, lest his guyd he bite or throw. 64

10 Oh dyverse ar the chastysinges off syn!
In mete, in drynk, in breth that man doth blow,

In slepe, in wach, in fretyng styll within, 67
That never soffer rest unto the mynd;
Filld with offence, that new and new begyn

With thousand feris the hert to strayne and bynd! 70
But for all this, he that in God doth trust
With marcy, shall hymsellff defendid fynd.

11 Joy! and rejoyse! I say, ye that be just, 73
In Him that makth and holdyth yow; so still
In Him your glory alwey set yow must,
All ye that be of upryght hert and will!

(Signed "T V.")

59 **Iye**] MS. *yle.* A. *eyes.*
60 **alone**] PS. *onlye.*
61 **man doth**] PS. *men do.*
65] 1530 Psalter, "Many sorows fall upon the ungodly."
67 **in wach**] PS. *and watch.*
69 **Filld**] PC. *Felde.* PS. *Filed.*
70 **bynd**] A. *blynde.*
71–72] 1530 Psalter, "But hym that trusteth in the lorde: mercy closeth roundaboute."
73 **I say**] A. omits *I.*
74] 1530 Psalter, "Be glad therefore in the lorde and reioyse ye rightwise, make ye mery, all faithfull and upryght in harte."
**makth and holdyth**] alt. from *doth contynew.*
75 **In Him your glory**] alt. from *In him I say*
76 **ye**] A. omits, and inserts *an* before *uprigght.*

## THIRD PROLOGUE

This song endid David did stint his voyce, 1
And in that while abowt he with his Iye,
Did seke the Cave with wich withouten noyce,
His sylence semid to argew and replye;
Apon this pees, this pees, that did rejoyce 5
The sowle with mercy, that mercy so did crye,
And fownd mercy at mercyes plentifull hand,
Never denid but whre it was withstand.

As the servant that in his masters face 9
Fyndyth pardon of his passid offence,
Consyderyng his gret goodnes and his grace,
Glad teris distills as gladsome recompense;
Ryght so David, that semid in that place 13
As marble ymage of singulor reverence,
Carffd in the rokk : with Iyes and handes on hygh
Made as by crafft to plaine, to sobbe, to sygh.

1 **stint his voyce**] alt. from *held his pece.*

2 **abowt he**] alt. from *did seke.* PS. *he aboute.*

3 **Did seke the Cave**] alt. from *the dark cave.* PS. *did seke the darke cave. which* is crossed out, and *ye* written over *cave.*

5 **this pees, this pees . . . rejoyce**] line alt. from *mercy wherein he did rejoyce.* Usual spelling in MS. is *peace.* Wiat's spelling is more casual than that of the scribe. PS. *his peace, this peace.*

7 **mercyes plentifull hand**] over *mercy* is written *plentefull.* A, PS. *plentyfull mercyes hand.*

10 **Fyndyth pardon**] A. *Ffynding the pardon.*

13 **that semid**] PS. omit *that.*

14 **As**] A. omits.

15 **Carffd in the rokk . . . on high**] A. omits *the.* alt. from *lift up.* MS. spelling *carffd.*

16 **Made as . . . to plaine . . . to sygh**] alt. from *semyng . . . to sygh . . . to sobbe.*

*Prologue* 3.

Aretino's version begins: "Tacquesi David tosto ch'egli hebbe cantato le sopradette parole e in quel santo tacere pareva che il suo silentio ragionasse con la spelunca dove era rinchiuso della pace che havea fatta con Dio. . . ."

This while a beme that bryght sonne forth sendes, 17
  That sonne the wich was never cloud cowd hide,
Percyth the cave and on the harpe distendes,
  Whose glauncyng light the cordes did over glyde :
And such luyster apon the harpe extendes, 21
  As lyght off lampe apon the gold clene tryde,
The torne wheroff in to his Iyes did stert,
Surprisd with Joye, by penance of the hert.

He then inflamd with farr more hote affect, 25
  Of God than he was erst off Bersabe,
His lifft fote did on the yerth erect,
  And just therby remaynth the tothr kne;
To his lifft syde his wayght he doth direct, 29
  Sure hope of helth, and harpe agayne takth he,
His hand, his tune, his mynd, sowght his lay,
Wych to the Lord with sobre voyce did say.

(Signed "T V.")

17 **This while . . . that bryght . . . sendes]** A. *The while.* MS. alt. from *down from that sonne off sendes.* PS. *sendeth* and *descendeth* (19).
18 **was]** A. *theare was.*
19 **the harpe]** A. *his harpe.*
20 **Whose . . . glyde]** alt. from *and with the luster on the cordes it glydes.*
21 **luyster]** A. *glister.*
23 **torne]** MSS. *torne.* A. *torne.* PS. *lorne.*
26 **than . . . Bersabe]** alt. from *than of his Idolle Bersabe.*
29 **lifft]** MS. spelling for *left.*
30 **Sure hope]** alt. from *assurd hope.* PS. *For hope of helthe hys harpe.*
31 **mynd]** A. *mynd eke.* PS. *mynde eke sought thys lay.*
32 **voyce]** A. *looke.*

## THIRD PENITENTIAL PSALM

*Dme me in furore tuo arguas me* Ps. 38.

O Lord as I thee have both prayd and pray, 1
(Altho in the be no alteration
But that we men lik as our sellffes we say

Mesuryng thy Justice by our mutations) 4
Chastice me not, O Lord, in thy furour,
Nor me correct in wrathfull castigation,

2 Ffor that thi arrows off fere, off terrour, 7
Of sword, of seknes, off famine, and of fyre,
Stikkes diepe in me, I lo from myn errour

Ame plongid up, as horse out of the myre 10
With strok off spurr, such is thi hand on me;
3 That in my fleshe, for terrour of thi yre

Is not oon poynt of ferme stabilite 13
Nor in my bonis; there is no stedfastnes,
Such is my drede of mutabilite;

1 **thee have**] PS. *have thee.*
2 **no**] alt. from *no such.*
3 **as our sellffes**] alt. from *as we selves.* MS. spelling *sellffes.*
8 **fyre**] alt. from *of deth.* PS., A. *of fyre.*
9 **stikkes diepe**] alt. from *ar stykyd.* PS. *sticke.*
**lo**] alt. from *now.*
10 **plongid**] PC. *plucked* (PS. note).
12 **terrour**] alt. from *fere.*
13 **oon**] MS. spelling *on.*
15 **drede**] alt. from *fere.*

*Third Psalm* (Ps. xxxviii).

Aretino's version begins: "Deh Signore, si come io ti ho pregato e si come ti riprego non mi riprendere nel tuo furore nel quale è posta la eterne dannatione de i rei nella guisa che gli dimostrera lo infermo, ne consentire che la tua misericordia volga le spalle al mio pianto con quello sdegno che ella le volgera al riso di coloro . . . ."

Ffor that I know my frailefull wykednes; 16
4 For why, my sinns above my hed ar bownd.
Lik hevi wheyght that doth my force oppresse;

Under the wych I stowp and bowe to grownd 19
As whilow plant, haled by vyolence;
5 And off my flesh ech not well curyd wound

That festred is by foly, and neclegens, 22
By secret lust hath ranklyd under skyn,
Not duly curyd by my penitence.

6 Perceyving thus the tyranny off sin, 25
That with his wheit hath humblid and deprest
My pryd, by gruging off the worme within

That never dyth, I lyve withouten rest; 28
7 So ar myn entrayles infect with fervent sore,
Fedyng the harme that hath my welth oprest;

That in my flesh is lefft no helth therfore; 31
8 So wondrus gret hath bene my vexation,
That it hath forst my hart to crye and rore.

16 **frailefull**] alt. from *sinfull.*

17 **For . . . bownd**] first reading *bycause my sins* (*ar clene*) alt. to (*above*) *my hed crownd.* 1530 Psalter: "For my sinnes have pressed downe my hed lyke an hevy burden: they are hevear then I may bear."

18 **wheyght**] usual spelling of this word.

19 **stowp**] MS. spelling *stopp.* A. *shrinck.*
**to grownd**] PS. *to the ground.*

20 **whilow plant**] alt. from *doth a bow.* The original line, entirely crossed out, reads, *By force wheroff the evill curid skarris.*

21 **not well**] alt. from *evyll.*

26 **wheit**] i. e. *weight.* A. *waighte.*

27 **gruging**] alt. from *grawyng.* A. *grudging,* probably merely difference in spelling. PS. *gnawyng.*

33 **it hath forst**] alt. from *forcyd hath.*
**to crye and rore**] alt. from *for to rore.*

9 O Lord thow knowst the' inward contemplation, 34
Off my desire; thou knowst my syghes and plaintes;
Thou knowst the teres of my lamentation

Can not expresse my hertes inward restraintes; 37
10 My hart pantyth, my force I fele it quaile
My syght, myn Iyes, my lok, dekays and fayntes;

11 And when my enmys did me most assayle, 40
My frendes most sure, wherein I sett most trust,
Myn own vertus sonest then did ffaile

And stond apart; reson and witt unjust, 43
As kyn, unkynd, were fardest gone at nede;
12 So had they place theire venim out to thrust

That sowght my deth by nowghty word and dede, 46
Their tonges reproch, theire wittes did fraude aplye
13 And I, lyke deffh and domme forth my way yede,

34 the' inward] A. *the inward.* Occasionally, as here, Wiat places an apostrophe between vowels, to be slurred in scansion (the' inward).

37–39] 1530 Psalter: "My harte trembleth and panteth from sorowe | my strength fayleth me | and even the very syght of myn eyes cesse from their office."

38 quaile] alt. from *faile.*

39 myn Iyes] A, PS. *my eyes.*

41 My frendes most sure] alt. from *Myn own vertus.*

most trust] alt. from *my trust.* 1530 Psalter: "My frendes and my felawes stode ageinste my wound, and my nyghe kynsfolke stode all afarre."

42 Myn own vertus . . . ffaile] alt. from *And frendes most sure.* A later hand has crossed out *vertus* and inserted *acquaintance,* the hand of corrector No. 2. This is the second correction in the Psalms which is not Wiat's. A. *me faile.*

44 were] A. omits.

fardest gone] alt. from *gone far off.*

45 they] MS. spelling *thi*; *thi* and *thy* are both written for *they* occasionally.

47 reproch] alt. from *deceyt.*

wittes] PS. *wit.*

48] 1530 Psalter: "But I, as it had been on deffe, harde nothynge at all: and as a dumne man opened not my mowth."

14 Lyk one that heris not, nor hath to replye 49
One word agayne, and knowyng that from thi hand
15 Thes thinges procede; thow O Lorde shalt supplye
My trust in The wherein I stikk and stand. 52
16 Yet have I had gret cawse to dred and fere
That thou woldst gyve my ffoos the over hand,
Ffor in my ffall they shewd suche plesant chere, 55
17 And ther with all I alway in the lash
Abyd the strok, and with me everywhere
I bere my fawte that gretly doth abashe 58
18 My dowlfull chere; ffor I my fawt confesse
And my desert doth all my comffort dashe.
19 In the mene while myn Enmys saffe encresse, 61
And my provokars herby do augment
That with out cause to hurt me do not cesse;
20 In evill for good agaynst me they be bent, 64
And hinder shall my good persuyt off grace,
21 Lo, now my God, that seist my hole intent

50 knowyng . . . hand] alt. from *that to thee O Lord.*
51 Thes . . . supplye] alt. from *I me direct thou shalt my helpe supply.*
52 My trust in The] alt. from *the trust off the.* PS. *my trust in that.*
54 That . . . my ffoos] alt. from *That myn enemys shold have.*
55 they] MS. spelling *thy.*
shewd] A. *shew.*
suche plesant] alt. from *rejoysing.*
58 that] A. *and.*
59 chere] MS. spelling *chre.*
61 saffe] PS. *still.* See v. 19, Ps. 38.
62 provokars . . . augment] alt. from *evill willers.* A. *provokes hearby do moche augment.*
63 hurt] alt. from *harme.*
64 be bent] alt. from *shall assent.*
66 God] alt. from *Lorde.*
seist] alt. from *knowst.*

My Lord! I ame thow knowst well in what case; 67
Fforsak me not, be not farr from me gone;
22 Hast to my help, hast Lord and hast apace,
O Lord the Lord off all my helth alone!

67 **Lord**] alt. from *God*. PS. omit *well*.
68 **be not . . . gone**] alt. from *not be not from me farr*. 1530 Psalter: "Forsake me not (lorde), be not farre from me (O God)."
This Psalm has no signature, but *f—s* (for finis?).

## FOURTH PROLOGUE

Lik as the pilgryme that in a long way 1
Fayntyng for hete, provokyd by some wind,
In some fresh shaade lith downe at mydes off day,
So doth off David the weryd voyce and mynd,
Tak breth off syghes when he had song this lay; 5
Under such shaad as sorow hath assynd.
And as the ton still myndes his viage end,
So doth the tothr to mercy still pretend.

On sonour cordes his fingers he extendes 9
Without heryng or jugement off the sownd
Down from his Iyes a streme of terys distendes
Without feling that trykill on the grownd;
As he that bledes in baigne, ryght so intendes 13
Th altryd sensis to that that thei ar bownd.
But syght and wepe he can non othr thing
And lok up still unto the hevins Kyng.

3 shaade lith downe] alt. from *wynde resteth.*
7 the ton] alt. from the *tone sekes still.* A, PS. *the one.*
8 the tothr] A, PS. *the other.*
9 sonour] A. *sower.* MS. alt. from *his fingers stryke upon the sonour cordes.*
13 baigne] A. *bayne.* PS. *vayne.*
14 Th altryd] alt. from *his sparplid.*
15 syght] MS. for *sigh*, possibly for the sake of euphony before the following vowel this spelling is not usual in the text.

*Prologue* 4.

Aretino's version begins: "[Tosto che David si spedi dalla terza Canzone] parve un peregrino che misurando con le mente la lunghezza del camino et havendone gia buone parte fornito, si arresta alla ombra al cui fresco lo hanno invitato l'aure riprendendo alquanto di quella lena che gli ha tolto la fatica dello andare."

But who had bene without the Cavis mowth, 17
  And herd the terys and syghs that he did strayne,
He wold have sworne there had, out of the sowth,
  A lewk warme wynd, browght forth a smoky rayne.
But that so close the Cave was and unkowth, 21
  That none but God was record off his payne,
Elles had the wynd blowne in all Israelles erys,
The woffull plaint, and of theire Kyng the terys.

Off wich some part when he up suppyd hade, 25
  Lik as he whom his owne thowght affrays
He torns his look, hym semith that the shade
  Of his offence agayne his force assays,
By violence, dispaire on hym to lade. 29
  Stertyng lik hym whom sodeyne fere dismays
His voyce he strainis and from his hert out bringes
This song that I not wyther he crys or singes

(Signed "T V.")

17 who had bene . . . the Cavis] A. *who so had been without.* alt. from *forth at.*
  Cavis] PS. *caue.*
18 terys and syghs] alt. from *syghs and teres.*
  he] PS. *hym.*
21 But that . . . was and unkowth] A. *But that the cave close was and eke uncouth.*
23 Israelles] A. misreads *Ifr'ells.* PS. *Israell.*
24 The . . . terys] PS. *of thyr kynge the wofull playnte and teares.*
30 Stertyng] alt. from *he sterts.*
  fere] MS. spelling *fer.*
32 not] i. e. *ne wat,* "do not know." A, PS. *note.*

## FOURTH PENITENTIAL PSALM

*Miserere mei domine* Ps. 51.

Rew on me Lord for thy goodnes and grace, 1
That off thy nature art so bountefull,
Ffor that goodnes, that in the world doth brace

Repugnant natures, in quiet wonderfull; 4
And for thy mercys nomber withowt end,
In hevin and yerth perceyvid so plentefull,

That over all they do them sellffes extend, 7
Ffor those marcys much more then man can synn.
Do way my synns that so thy grace offend!

2 Agayne wash me, but wash me well within, 10
And from my synn that thus makth me affrayd,
Make thou me clene as ay thy wont hath byn.

Ffor unto The no nombre can be layd 13
For to prescrybe remissions off offence,
In hertes retornd, as thow thy sellff hast sayd.

3 And I be know my ffawt my neclegence, 16
And in my syght my synn is fixid fast,
Theroff to have more perfett penitence.

9 **way**] PS. *away.*

10 **Agayne**] written over *Oft tymes.* A. *Ofte tymes.* PS. *Ofte tymes, agayne washe, washe me well wythin.*

11 **makth**] PS. *makes.*

17 **is fixid fast**] alt. from *shall still remayne.*

18 **Theroff**] A. *Therefore.*

*Fourth Psalm* (Ps. li).

Aretino's version begins: "Habbi misericordia di me Iddio non secondo il picciolo merito del mio digiuno del mio orare . . . del mio pianto ma secundo quella tua gran misericordia *con la quale avanzi di grandezza il volto del cielo, il petto de i monti, il seno di mari il grembo della terra i piedi dello abisso, et la mesura de lo immenso.*"

4 To The alone, to The have I trespast, 19
Ffor none can mesure my fawte but thou alone,
For in thy syght I have not bene agast

For to offend, Juging thi syght as none, 22
So that my fawt were hid from syght of man;
Thy majestie so from my mynd was gone.

This know I and repent: pardon thow than, 25
Wherby thou shalt kepe still thy word stable,
Thy Justice pure and clene; by cawse that whan

I pardond ame, then forthwith justly able, 28
Just, I ame jugd, by justice off thy grace;
5 Ffor I my sellff, lo, thing most unstable,

Fformd in offence; conceyvid in like case: 31
Ame nowght but synn from my natyvite.
Be not this sayd for my excuse alase,

But off thy help to shew necessite, 34
6 Ffor lo thou loves the trowgh off inward hert
Wich yet doth lyve in my fidelite;

24 **mynd**] PS. has the following note: "sic MSS., *sighte* PC. Perhaps PC. printed *sighte*, copying the word from the line above."

26 **shalt kepe still**] alt. from *hold ferme and fast.* (2) *shalt thy word still k——.* (3) as in text.

27 **pure**] alt. from *stable.*

28 **then**] alt. from *and.*

29 **I ame**] alt. from *to be.*

33 **Be not . . . alase**] original line crossed through, *yet lo thou loves the hertes trowgh in inward place.*

35 **thou loves the trowgh off**] PS. *thou lovest the truthe of the.*

36 **my fidelite**] A. omits *my.* P.C. *most fidelite.*

Tho I have fallen by fraylte overthwart, 37
(Ffor willfull malice led me not the way
So much as hath the flesh drawn me apart)

Wherfore O Lord as thou hast done alway, 40
Tech me the hydden wisdome off thy lore,
Sins that my fayth doth not yet dekay.

7 And as the Juyz to hele the liepre sore, 43
With hysope clense,—clense me, and I ame clene;
Thou shalt me wash, and more then snow therfore

I shall be whight,—how foule my faut have bene. 46
8 Thow off my helth shalt gladsome tydynges bryng,
When from above remission shall be sene.

Descend on yerth; then shall for joye up spryng 49
The bonis, that were afore consumd to dust.
9 Look not, O Lord, apon myn offendyng,

But do a way my dedes that ar unjust. 52
10 Mak a clene hert in the myddes off my brest
With upryght spryte, purgid from all vile lust

38 **led me not the way**] alt. from *hath not led me a way*. *hath not* crossed out *no the* inserted after *led me*, and *a* crossed out. A. *led me not the way*.

42 **fayth**] scans as two syllables.
**yet**] A. *as yet*.

43 **Juyz**] i. e. *Jews*. A. Juyce. PS. *Juyce* with note "sic MSS. PC. Jewes." Again PC. follows the original text.

53 **myddes**] PS. *middell*.

54 **purgid . . . lust**] the first reading of the MS. is given here, as being more vigorous than the corrected, *voyded from filthy lust*. A, PS. follow corrected line, *With spryght upryght, voyde from all filthie luste*.

11 Ffrom thyn Iyes cure cast me not in unrest, 55
Nor take from me thy spryte of holynesse,
12 Rendre to me Joye off thy help and rest;

My will conferme with spryte off stedfastnesse; 58
13 And by this shall thes goodly thinges ensue:
Sinners I shall in to thy ways adresse;

They shall retorne to the and thy grace sue. 61
14 My tong shall prayse thy Justification,
15 My mowth shall spred thy gloryus praysis true.

But off thy sellff O God, this operation 64
It must proced, by purging me from blood;
Among the Just that I may have relation.

And of thy lawdes for to let owt the flood 67
Thou must, O Lord, my lypps furst unlose;
16 Ffor if thou hadst estemid plesant good

The owtward dedes that outward men disclose, 70
I wold have offerd unto The sacrifice,
Butt thou delyghtes not in no such glose

Off owtward dede, as men dreme and devyse. 73
17 The sacrifice that the Lord lykyth most
Is spryt contryt; low hert in humble wyse

55 **Iyes**] spelling here *Iye.*
57 **Rendre to**] alt. from *retorne.*
**rest**] PS. alter to *heste.*
58 **My will**] alt. from *and me.*
**with**] PS. *with the.*
59 **goodly**] A. *godlye* (misinterpreted).
61 **They**] A. *Theise.*
63 **mowth**] spelling here *mowgh.*
68 **furst unlose**] PS. A. *at furst unloose.*

Thou dost accept, O God for plesant host, 76
18 Make Syon, Lord, acordyng to thy will,
Inward Syon, the Syon of the ghost,

Off hertes Hierusalem; strength the walles still; 79
19 Then shalt thou take for good thes uttward dedes,
As sacryfice thy plesure to fullfill,
Off The alone thus all our good procedes.

(Signed "T V.")

76 host] *i. e.* sacrifice. (Latin, *hostia.*)
80 thes uttward dedes] PS. *the outwardes dedes.*
81 As] PS. *as a.*

## FIFTH PROLOGUE

Off diepe secretes that David here did sing, 1
Off mercy, off fayth, off frailte, off grace,
Off Goddes goodnes, and of Justifying,
The gretnes dyd so astonne hym selff a space,
As who myght say: who hath exprest this thing? 5
I synner I, what have I sayd, alas?
That Goddes goodnes wold within my song entrete,
Let me agayne considre and repete.

And so he doth; but not exprest by word, 9
But in his hert he tornith, and paysith
Ech word that erst his lypps myght forth aford,
He poyntes, he pawsith, he wonders, he praysith.
The marcy, that hydes of Justice the swourd, 13
The Justice that so his promesse complysyth
For his wordes sake, to worthilesse desert
That gratis his graces to men doth depart.

1 **Off**] alt. from *The*.
here] PS. *ther*.
3 **goodnes**] A. *goodnes eke*.
4 **The gretnes dyd**] MS. spelling *grettnes*; alt. from (1) *did with the wonder*, (2) *the wich greatnes*.
selff] PS. omits.
7 **within**] PS. *in*.
10 **and paysith**] PS. *oft and payseth*.
12 **poyntes**] this word underlined in the text. PS. *pantes*, with this note: "*poyntes* MSS., *pointeth* PC."
wonders] PS. *wondreth*.
13 **hydes**] PS. *hydeth*.
16 **graces . . doth**] PS. *grace . . . do* alters the meaning; the context requires the plural *graces* as in text. *grace* gives a different signification.

*Prologue* 5.

Aretino's version begins: "Poscia che David hebbe scongiuratala grande misericordia di Dio ad havere misericordia delle colpe sue, si rimase inginocchioni et temendo di non rivedere la imagine del suo peccato . . ."

Here hath he comfort, when he doth mesure 17
  Mesureles marcys to mesureles fawte,
To prodigal sinners infinit tresure,
  Tresure termeles that never shall defawte,
Ye when that sinn shall fayle & may not dure 21
  Mercy shall reygne; gaine whome shall no assawte
Off hell prevaile, by whome lo at this day,
Off hevin gates Remission is the kay.

And when David hath ponderd well and tryd, 25
  And seith hym sellff not utterly deprivid
From lyght of grace, that derk of sinn dyd hyde,
  He fyndes his hope so much therwith revivid,
He dare importune the Lord on every syde; 29
  For he knowth well to mercy is ascrybid
Respectles labour, importune, crye and call,
And thus begynth his song therwithall:

(Signed "T V.")

18 **marcys**] PS. *mercye.*
20 **termeles**] PS. amends to *celestyall.*
22 **gaine**] A, PS. *gainst.*
**no**] A. *not.*
24 **gates**] MS. spelling *gattes.*
25 **ponderd well**] alt. from *considerd this.*
27 **that . . . hyde**] alt. from *that sin had made hym mis;* alt. from *the sinn.*
28 **fyndes**] PS. *fyndeth.*
**so**] A. omit, and adds *all* after *therewith.* PS. omits.
29 **He dare importune**] alt. from *importuneth he.*
25–32 The last stanza written in great haste, and with a thicker pen.

## FIFTH PENITENTIAL PSALM

*Dme exaudi orationem meum* Ps. 102.

Lord! here my prayer! and let my crye passe 1
Unto The Lord withowte impediment;
Do not from me torne thy mercifull face,

2 Unto my sellff leving my government. 4
In tyme off troble and adversitye
Inclyne to me thyn ere, and thyn intent,

And when so I call help my necessitye; 7
Redely graunt theffect off my desyre;
Thes bold demaundes do plese thy majestye

And ek my Case, such hast doth well require. 10
3 For like as smok my days bene past awaye,
My bonis dryd up as forneis with the fyre;

4 My hert my mynd is wytherd up like haye, 13
By cawse I have forgot to take my brede
My brede of lyff, the word of trowth I saye;

And ffor my plaintes, my syghes and my drede 16
My bonis, my strenght, my very force of mynde
Cleved to the flesh, and from the spryte were flede.

2 withowte impediment] *withouten stop or let* (first reading).
3 face] MS. spelling *fase*, to agree with *passe*.
11 bene] PS. *are*.
14, 15 brede] alt. from *foode*.
16 my plaintes, my] alt. from *my plaintefull*. PS. *my playntfull*.
my drede] A, PS. *for my drede*.

*Fifth Psalm (Ps. cii).*

Aretino's version begins: "Esaudisci Signore la mia oratione da che tu vedi la contritione del core somma mente contristato del suo haver peccato fa che il mio grido giunga a te. . . ."

I as dispairate thy mercy for to fynd, 19
5 So made I me the solaine pelycane :
And lyke th owle that fleith, by propre kynd,

Lyght of the day, and hath her sellff betane 22
To kuyut lyff, out off all companye,
6 With waker care that with this wo bygane;

Lik the sparow was I solytarye 25
That sittes alone under the howsis eves;
7 This while my foes conspired continually

And did provok the harme off my dises; 28
8 Wherfor like ashes my bred did me savour
Of thi just word, the tast myght not me ples.

Wherfor my drynk I temperd with lycour 31
Off weping teris, that from myn Iyes do rayne
9 By cawse I know the wrath off thy furour,

Provokt by ryght had off my pride disdayne; 34
For thou didst lyfft me up to throw me downe
To teche me how to know my sellff agayne,

19 **as dispairate**] alt. from *in diepe despaire.*

20 **I me**] PC. *I am* (so PS. notes). 1530 Psalter: "I am lyke an oestrege of the wyldernes and am lyke an houlet in an olde forlaten house."

23 **To kuyut lyff**] *kuyut*, i.e. "quiet," alt. from *to lyve alone.* A, PS. *To ruyne! lyff.*

24 **With waker care**] cf. Sonnet, No. 28.

25 **Lik the sparow**] 1530 Psalter: "I lye wakinge and am lefte alone lyke the sparowe in the thacke" (*i. e.* thatch).

**was I**] alt. from *I ame.*

26 **eves**] MS. spelling *effes.*

28 **provok**] alt. from *assault.*

**dises**] MS. spelling *dises.*

29 **ashes**] *ash* with *es* added (different pen), Wiat's writing.

30 alt. from *In trouth I found no trust that myght me ples.*

32 **Iyes do rayne**] MS. spelling *YIes.* A. *down rayne.* PS. *dyd raine.*

10 Wherby I knew that helples I shold drowne. 37
My days like shadow declyme and I do drye;
11 And The, for ever Eternte doth crowne;

World withowt end doth last thy memorye. 40
12 For this frailte that yokyth all manekynd,
Thou shalt a wake, and rue this misery;

Rue on Syon, Syon that, as I ffynd 43
Is the peple that lyve under thy law;
For now is tyme, the tyme at hand assynd,

13 The tyme so long, that doth thy servantes draw 46
In gret desyre, to se that plesant day,
Day off redeming Syon ffrom sins Aw.

Ffor they have ruth to se in such dekay, 49
In dust and stones, this wrechid Syon lowr;
14 Then the gentilles shall dred thy name alway;

All erthly kinges thy glory shall honour, 52
15 Then when thy grace thi Syon thus redemith,
When thus thou hast declard thy myghtye powre:

41 **manekynd**] first reading, *For this misery that yokyth every man.*

43] 1530 Psalter: "Thou shalt ryse and have pety on Zyon, for it is tyme for the to favor it, for the day apoïted is nowe come."

46 **doth**] PS. omit.

50 **lowr**] PC. *lore.* PS. *Lowre,* with this note, "sic MSS. PC. *lore* which may signify 'lost,'" probably a misprint in PC.

51 **Then**] alt. from *and so.*

53 **Then . . . redemith**] alt. from *Then when thou has thy sion thus savid.*

54 **myghtye powre**] MS. *myght powre,* evident slip for *myghtë power,* or *might and power.*

16 The Lord, his servauntes wishis so estemith 55
That he hym tornth unto the poores request,
17 To our discent this to be written semith

Off all comfortes as consolation best. 58
And thei that then shalbe regenerate
Shall praise the Lord therfore both most and lest.

18 Ffor he hath lokt from the heyght of his estate; 61
The Lord from hevyn in yerth hath lokt on us,
19 To here the mone of them that as algate

In fowle bondage; to lose and to discus 64
The sonns of deth owt from theire dedly bond;
20 To gyve therby occasion gracius;

In this Syon, His holy name to stond, 67
And in Hierusalem his laudes lastyng ay,
21 When in one chirche the peple off the lond,

And remes, bene gaderd to serve, to lawd, to pray. 70
The Lord alone so just and mercyfull.
22 But to this samble runnyng in the way

55 **The Lord**] MS. *The* with *T* crossed out. The first reading, *The Lord hath*, alt. to *He hath his*, and finally as in text, omitting to add initial *T* to *The*.

57 **To our discent . . . semith**] "*discent*, i. e. *condescension*" (PS.). The meaning is, however, clear in the first reading, *To all mankynd this publysht me senith. dissent* meant *descent* (i. e. descendants).

67 **His holy name**] *thys*, with *t* crossed out.

68 **And in Hierusalem his**] alt. from *And Hierusalem thys*.

69–70] 1530 Psalter: "*When the people and the kyngdomes shalbe gathered together* to worshype the lorde." So Great Bible 1539.

70 **bene gaderd**] first reading, *shall range*; second, *bene ranged*; third, as above.

71 **alone**] A, PS. *above*.

72 **But to this samble runnyng in the way**] a striking example of misinterpretation in the later MSS. *samble* means *assembly*. A. *but to this sample rouning* (i. e. *whispering*) *in the waye*. PS. notes: "PC. *these fete feble*," (an alteration by Harington ?).

My strenght faylyth to reche it at the full; 73
He hathe abrigd my days, they may not dure
To se that terme, that terme so wonderfull.

23 Altho I have with herty will and cure 76
Prayd to the Lord: Take me not Lord away
In myddes off my yeres, tho thyn, ever sure

Remayne eterne, whom tyme can not dekay. 79

24 Thow wrowghtst the yerth, thy handes thevyns did make
Thei shall perysh and thou shalt last alway.

25 And althinges aye shall were and overtake 82
Like cloth, and thou shalt chainge them like aparell,
Tourne and translate, and thei in worth it take;

26 But Thou Thy sellff, the sellff remaynist well 85
That thou wast erst; and shalt thi yeres extend;
Then sins to this there may nothing rebell,

27 The gretest comfort that I can pretend 88
Is, that the childerne off thy servantes dere
That in thy word ar gott, shall withowt end
Byfore thy face be stablisht all in fere.

(Signed "T. V.")

77 **Take . . . Lord away**] A. *Lord take . . . away.*

78 **my**] A. omits.

80 **thevyns**] A, PS. *the heavens.*

83 **like**] MS. spelling *lik.* Wiat's practice is to write final *e* before an initial vowel.

84 **thei in worth**] PS. *thou in wrath*, with this note: "*they in worthe* PC. and MSS."

85 **Thou Thy sellff, the sellff**] MSS. and PC. perfectly intelligibly. PS. alters to *thou thyself, thyself.*

91 **stablisht**] MS. spelling *stabisht.* Spelling errors have crept in through the haste in writing.

## SIXTH PROLOGUE

When David had perceyvid in his brest 1
The sprite of God retournd that was exild,
By cause he knew he hath alone exprest
Thes grete thinges that greter spryte compild.
As shalme or pype letes owt the sownd imprest 5
By musikes art, forgid tofore and fyld,
I say when David had perceyvid this
The sprite of comfort in him revivid is.

Ffor therapon he makyth argument 9
Off reconsiling unto the Lordes grace;
Altho sometyme to prophecy have lent
Both brut bestes and wikkyd hertes a place,
But our David, jugith in his intent 13
Hym sellff by penance clene owt off this cace,
Wherby he hath remission off offence,
And gynnyth to alow his payne & penitence.

3 By cause . . . exprest] alt. from *For that he knew of hym were not exprest.*
4 grete] A, PS. *same great.*
compild] letter *e* added later, but not the usual type of *e*.

*Prologue* 6.
Aretino's version begins: "Cantato e hebbe David . . . il pentito Re recevette nell'anima una disusata consolatione per cui egli conobbe che Iddio haveva aperta le orecchie al pregar suo. . . .

But when he weyth the fawt and recompense 17
  He damth his dede and fyndyth playne
A twene them two, no whitt equivalence,
  Wherby he takes all owtward dede in vayne,
To bere the name off ryghtfull penitence, 21
  Wich is alone the hert retornd agayne;
And sore contryt that doth his fawt bymone,
And owtward dede the sygne or fruyt alone.

With this he doth deffend the slye assault 25
  Off vayne alowance of his voyde desert;
And all the Glory off his forgyven fault
  To good alone he doth it hole convert.
His owne meryt he fyndyth in deffault, 29
  And whilst he ponderth thes thinges in his hert,
His knee, his arme, his hand, sustenid his chyn,
When he his song agayne thus did begyn:

(Signed "T. V.")

18 **his dede**] A, PS. *this his dede.*
19 **two**] MS. spelling *to.* A. *twoe.* PS. *two.*
20 **all . . . vayne**] alt. from *all recompense as vayne.*
22 **wich**] alt. from *that.*
23 **bymone**] MS. *by mone.*
24 **the sygne . . . alone**] alt. from *is fruyte theroff alone.*
26 **voyde desert**] A. *worde desert.* PS. *owne deserte* (with no notification of alteration of text.
28 **To good alone**] A, PS. *To God alone.* Wiat's rendering *good* brings out the full force of l. 26.
30 **whilst**] PS. *whiles.*

## SIXTH PENITENTIAL PSALM

*De Profundis clamari* Ps. 130.

Ffrom depth off sin and from a diepe dispaire, 1
From depth off deth, from depth off hertes sorow,
From this diepe Cave off darknes diepe repayre,

To The have I cald O Lord, to be my borow. 4
Thow in my voyce, O Lord, perceyve and here
2 My hert, my hope, my plaint, my overthrow,

My will to ryse, and let by graunt apere 7
That to my voyce thyn eres do well entend;
No place so farr that to The is not nere;

No depth so diepe that thou ne maist extend, 10
Thyn ere therto; here then my wofull plaint,
3 Ffor, Lord, if thou do' observe what men offend,

And putt thy natyff mercy in restraint; 13
If just exaction demaund recompence
Who may endure O Lord, who shall not faynt

1] 1530 Psalter: "Frome my moste depeste painfull troubles called I upon the lorde."
3 repayre] A. *dispaire.* misreading from l. 1.
4 To The] A. omits *To.*
9 that . . . nere] alt. from *but to the is nere.*
11 Thyn ere] alt. from *Thy self.*
12 do' observe] A, PS. omit *do.* Notice Wiat's apostrophe for slurring words.
13 thy natyff] A. omits *thy.*
14 recompence] A. *a recompence.*

*Sixth Psalm* (Ps. cxxx).

Aretino's version begins: "Dai profondi io ho esclamato a te Signore, Signore essandisci ia oratione mia."

At suche acompt? dred, and not reverence 16
Shold so raine large. But thou sekes rather love
4 Ffor in thy hand is mercys resedence

By hope wheroff thou dost our hertes move. 19
5 I in the Lord have set my confydence
My sowle such trust doth evermore aprove.

Thi holy word of eterne excellence, 22
Thy mercys promesse, that is alway just
Have bene my stay, my piller and pretence.

6 My sowle in God hath more desyrus trust, 25
Than hath the wachman lokyng for the day
By the releffe to quench of slepe the thrust.

7 Let Israell trust unto the Lord alway, 28
Ffor grace and favour arn his propertie :
Plenteus rannzome shall come with hym I say,
8 And shall redeme all our iniquitie.

(Signed "T. V.")

16 **dred**] PS. *so dred ;* omit *and.*

17 **Shold so raine large**] MS. spelling *raine.* PS. *should raigne at large.*

18 **Ffor in thy hand**] alt. from *For mercy with thee.*
**mercys**] A. *mercye.*

19 **move**] A, PS. *eke move.*

22 **holy**] MS. spelling *holly*, but spelt correctly elsewhere.

23 **This line** alt. from *Thy just promesse that is infallible.*

24 **pretence**] so MSS. and PC. PS. corrects to *defence. Pretence* has the 16th-century meaning of "intent," "design."

25–26] 1530 Psalter: "My soule waiteth for the lorde as desyerously as do the watche men in the mornyng watche desyer the daye springe." The Great Bible, 1539, reads: "My soule doth patiently abyde the Lorde from the one mornynge to the other." Wiat evidently follows the 1530 version here.

26 **wachman . . . day**] alt. from *wach that lokyth for the day.*

27 **By the releffe . . . thrust**] MS. first reading *for his releffe. for* scratched out, and *by the* overwritten. A. *By this his relief.* PS. *for his relief: to quench of slepe he thurst. thrust*, i. e. *thirst*, to rhyme with *trust.* A, PS. *thurst.*

28 **Let . . . alway**] alt. from *Let all Israill trust in the Lord, I say.*

30 **Plenteus rannzome . . . I say**] alt. from *Plenteffull rannzome cometh wt hym I say.*

31 **And . . . redeme**] alt. from *And he shalt rannzome.*

## SEVENTH PROLOGUE

This word 'redeme' that in his mowth did sownd 1
Did put David, it semyth unto me,
As in a traunce to starre apon the grownd,
And with his thowght the hyght of hevin to se,
Where he beholdes the Word that shold confownd 5
The sword off deth, by humble ere to be
In mortall mayd, in mortall habitt made
Eternall lyff in mortall vaile to shade.

He seith that Word, when full rype tyme shold come 9
Do way that vayle by fervent affectione,
Torne off with deth, for deth shold have her dome,
And lepeth lyghter from such corruptione.
The glutt of lyght that in the ayre doth lome, 13
Mann redemid, deth hath her distructione;
That mortall vaile hath immortalite;
David assurance off his iniquite.

1 **Mowth**] MS. spelling *mowght.*
6 **The sword . . . be**] PS. corrects to *the worde of Death, by humility to be.*
8 **Eternall lyff**] PS. *Eternitye.*
9 **shold**] alt. from *was.*
10 **Do way**] alt. from *shak off.*
13 **the ayre**] A. omits *the.*
14 **Mann**] alt. from *sin.*
**redemid**] PS. *redeemeth.*
16 **David**] PS. *To David.*

*Prologue* 7.

Wiat does not follow the Italian in this Prologue, but *substitutes four very fine original stanzas.*

Aretino's version begins: "Se mai a Dio furore grate le oratione de i suoi serv gli fu grata questa di David, per che egli la suelse dal profondo core. . . .'

Wherby he frames this reason in his hert : 17
" That Goodnes wych doth not forbere His Sonne
" From deth for me, and can therby convert
" My deth to lyff, my sin to salvation,
" Both can & woll a smaller grace depart 21
" To hym that suyth by humble supplication.
" And sins I have his larger grace assayd
" To aske this thing, whi am I then affrayd ? "

" He grauntyth most to them that most do crave, 25
And he delyghtes in suyte without respect;
Alas my sonne persuys me to the grave
Sufferd by God my sinne for to correct;
But of my sinne sins I my pardonne have 29
My sonnis persuyt shall shortly be reject.
Then woll I crave with suryd confidence."
And thus begynnis the suyt off his pretence.

(Signed "T. V.")

18–19 His Sonne From deth for me] alt. from *the deth Of his dere son.*
23 And . . . assayd] alt. from *Sur I have then his large bonte assayd.*
25 most do crave] alt. from *aske him most.*
26 suyte without respect] alt. from *forceable request.*
27 my sonne] PS. notes : "*i. e.* Absalom."
to the grave] alt. from *with his ost* (i. e. *army*).
32 begynnis] A, PS. *begynneth.*

## SEVENTH PENITENTIAL PSALM

*Domine exaudi orationem meam* Ps. 143.

Here my prayer, O Lord, here my request, 1
Complysh my bone, answere to my desire,
Not by desert, but for thyn own byhest

In whose ferme trowgh, thou promest myn empyre 4
To stond stable, and after thy Justise
Performe, O Lord, the thing that I require;

2 But not off law, after the forme and guyse, 7
To entre Jugement with thy thrall bond slave
To plede his ryght, for in such maner wyse

By fore thy syght no man his ryght shall save; 10
Ffor off my sellff, lo this my ryghtwisenes,
By skourge and whipp and prykyng spurrs I have

Skante rysen up, such is my bestlynes; 13
3 Ffor that, my enmy hath pursuyd my lyff
And in the dust hath soyld my lustines;

1] 1530 Psalter reads: "O Lord heare my pray$^{r}$: lystene unto my fervent besechynge for thi trorothes sake, grant me for thy rightwysnes."

2 bone] MS. spelling for *boon.*

answere . . . desire] alt. from *supply thou my desire.*

5 after thy] alt. from *thyn own.*

6 the thing] PS. *that thing.*

7 But not . . . guyse] alt. from *But not acordyng to just ryght. For the.*

11 rightwisenes] Wiat follows the 1530 Psalter in the use of this word. A, PS. *righteousnesse.*

12 prykyng spurrs I have] alt. from *suffrans that.* A. *pryking sours have.*

13 rysen] A. *rysyng.*

*Seventh Psalm* (Ps. cxliii).

Aretino's version begins: "Signore esaudisci la mia oratione moriti a pieta e riguardo con l'occhio della tuo misericordia il pentimento del cor mio."

Ffor that, in heins to fle his rage so ryff 16
He hath me forst as ded to hyd my hed;
4 And for bycawse within my sellff at stryff

My hert and spryte with all my force were fled, 19
5 I had recourse to tyms that have ben past,
And did remembre thy dedes in all my dred,

And did peruse thy workes that ever last; 22
Wherby I knew above those wondres all
6 Thy mercys were—Then lyfft I up in hast

My handes to Thee : my sowle to thee did call : 25
Like bareyne soyle, for moystre off thy grace.
7 Hast to my help, O Lord afore I fall,

Ffor sure I fele my spryte doth faynt a pace; 28
Torne not thy face from me, that I be layd
In compt off them that hedlyng down to pase

8 In to the pitt. Shew me by tyms thyn Ayde 31
Ffor on thy grace I holly do depend
And in thi hand, sins all my helth is stayde.

Do me to know what way thou wolt I bend; 34
Ffor unto The I have reysd up my mynd.
9 Rydd me O Lord, from that that do entend

16 **Ffor that, in heins to fle . . . ryff**] version 1, *For that in heins as man in mortall stryff.* A. *forreyne realms to flye his rage so rife.* PS. *To forreyne realms . . . rife.* 1530 Psalter : "he hath set me in darknes lyke as men juged to dethe."

17 **me forst as ded**] alt. from *constrained me for*.

21 **dedes**] alt. from *workes*.

24 **were**] alt. from *ar*.

29 **that I be layd**] alt. from *to make me seme*.

32 **holly**] i. e. *wholly*.

33 **And in thi hand**] alt. from *Do me to know*.

My foos to me; ffor I have me assind 37
Allway within thy secrette protection;
10 Tech me thy will that I by The may fynd

The way to work the same in affection. 40
Ffor Thou, my God, thy blyssyd upryght spryte
In lond of trowght shalbe my dyrection.

11 Thow, for thy name, Lord, shalt revive my spryte 43
Within the ryght that I receyve by Thee,
Wherby my lyff off danger shalbe quyte.

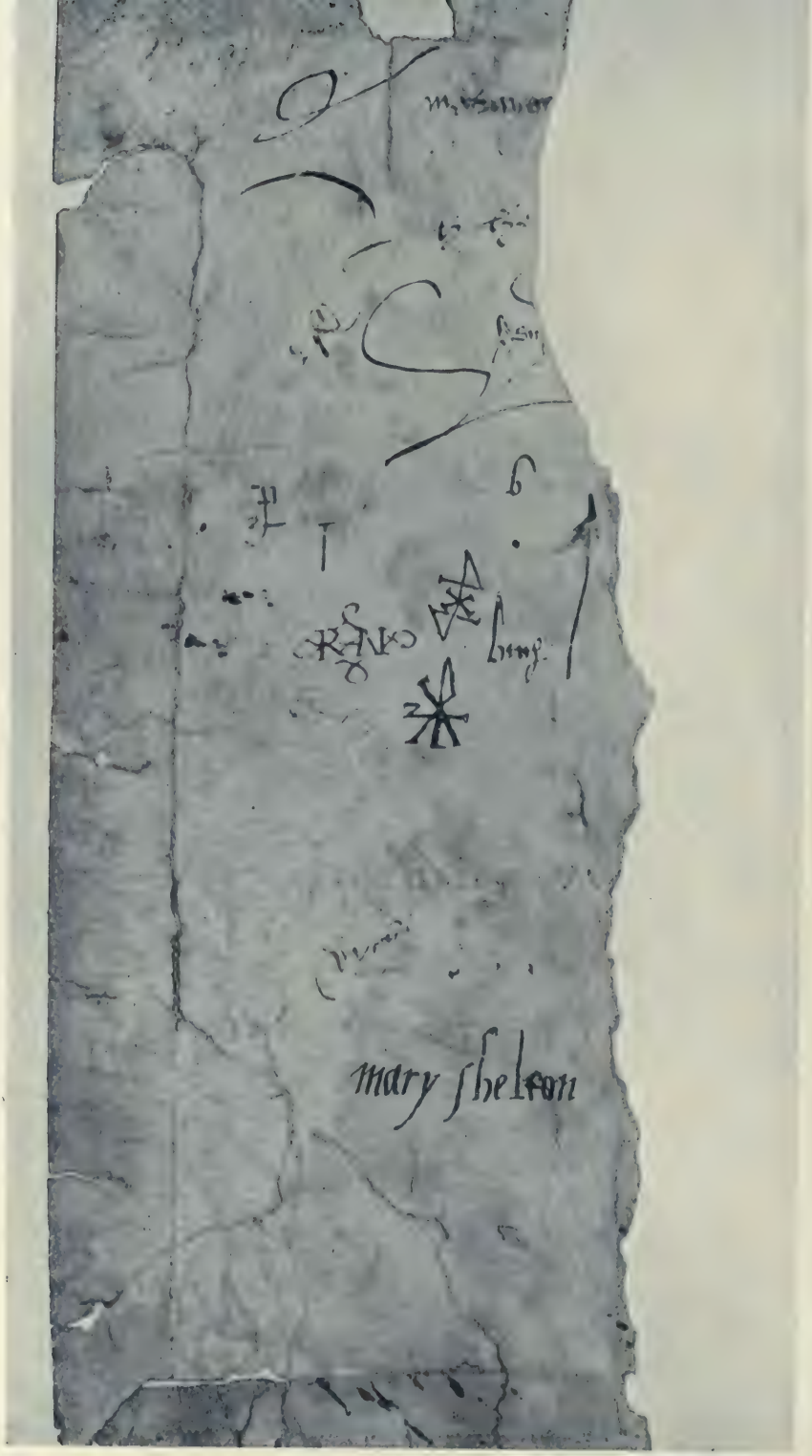
12 Thou hast fordone theire grete iniquite 46
That vext my soule; thou shalt also confownd
My foos O Lord for thy benignite,
Ffor thyn ame I thy servant ay most bownd.

(Signed "T. V.")

37 to me] alt. from *on me*. A. *to be*.
39 Tech] A. *Theache*.
41 upryght spryte] alt. from *spryte shall guyde*. PS. *spryte upryght*.
42 lond of trowght] A, PS. *lawde of truthe* (with dissimilar spelling).
47 thou shalt also confownd] A. *also confownde*.
46–49 These lines are added; the original last four lines, crossed out by Wiat, are as follows—

There whilst thou shalt of thy benignite
Confound my foos, and them distroy that seke
To hurt my lyff by theyre iniquite:
Thus I thi servant humbly the besek.

49 thus] alt. from *sins*.
PS. reproduced the *Colophon* of the 1549 edition "Finis. ¶ Cum Previlegio | ad imprim | endum | Solum | M.D.XLIX. | the last day of December."


mary sheleon

# POEMS PECULIAR TO THE DEVONSHIRE MS.

## PART I[1]

I

III

Take heede lo yonne that ye lo spyde
Your lovyng lyes can see lyghte
[illegible]

(Chorus) take heede

IV

For sore there be of craftye kynde
That lyke shew no parte of [illegible]
Everlye their lyes ye [illegible]

(Chorus) take heede

V

This is lyke unto [illegible]
And thoughte eyghte [illegible]
But it was not so [illegible]

(Chorus) take heede!

[1] Part I of this section consists of the poems contained, under exactly the same [illegible] in the Harley MS. of the 16th. The variations are so small and [illegible] generally, from the 16th, the 16th and the [illegible] version of Wyatt's songs. [illegible] the Harley MS. [illegible] manuscript, but have [illegible] Wyatt's poems. [illegible] poems are included.

[2] [illegible]

[3] [illegible] MS. spelling here is

FRAGMENT OF FLY-LEAF, D. MS.

*Brit. Mus., Add.* 17492] [*To face p.* 251, *Vol. I.*

# POEMS PECULIAR TO THE DEVONSHIRE MS.

## PART I[1]

### I

(1)

Take hede be tyme lest ye be spyde.
Your lovyng Iyes can not hyde,
At last the trouthe will sure be tryde 3
Therefore take hede!

(2)

For som there be of craftye kynde,
Thowe yow shew no parte of your mynde,
Surelye their Iyes yo can not blynde, 6
Therefore take hede!

(3)

Ffor in lyke case themselves hathe bene,
And thowght ryght sure none had them sene,
But it was not as they did wene 9
Therefore take hede!

[1] Part I of this section consists of the poems scattered, either singly or in small groups, over the earlier part of the MS. They represent for the most part Court poems. Nos. 11, 12, 21, 29, 30 are the most musical of Wiat's songs. Others of the poems included here are of doubtful authorship, but have hitherto been included amongst Wiat's poems. Doubtful poems are notified.

4 **craftye**] MS. spelling *crafete*.

6 **Iyes**] normal spelling, and found in l. 2. MS. spelling here *Ies*.

(4)

All thowgh theye be of dyvers skooles
And well can use all craftye toolles
At lengthe they prove themselves but fooles 12
Therefore take hede!

(5)

Yf theye myght take you in that trape,
They wolde sone leve yt in your lape,
To love unspyde is but a happe, 15
Therefore take hede!

11 ȝuse] MS. spelling *yose*.
This poem is signed with sprawling initials that resemble "T. W.

## 2

My pen, take payn a lyttyll space
To folow that whyche dothe me chase,
And hathe in hold my hart so sore;
But when thow hast thys browght to passe,
My pen I prithe, wryght nomore! 5

Remember, oft thow hast me easyd,
And all my payne full well apeasyd
But now I know, unknowen before,
Ffor where I trust I am dysceavyd;
And yet my pen thow canst no more. 10

A tyme thow haddyst as other have,
To wryght whyche way my hope to crave;
That tyme ys past, withdrawe therffore;
Syns we do lose that other save
As good leve off and wryght no more. 15

In worthe to use another waye
Not as we wold, but as we maye,
For ons my losse ys past restore,
And my desyre ys my decaye,
My pen, yet wryght a lytyll more. 20

5 prithe] MS. *prthe.* So also l. 30.

6–7 easyd, apeasyd] MS. spelling *eaysyd, apeaysyd.*

15 off] In some respects this MS. has a more modern appearance in spelling here *off*, where the E. MS. invariably has *of* for the adverb. *Cf.* also spelling *themselves*, 1, 7.

To love in vayn who ever shall,
  Of worldlye payn it passythe all,
  As in lyke case I fynd; wherefore
  To hold so fast and yet to ffall!
  Alas my pen, now wryght no more! 25

Syns thow hast taken payn thys space
  To folow that whyche dothe me chase
  And hathe in hold my hart so sore,
  Now hast thow browght my mynde to passe
  My pen I prithe wryght no more! 30

fynys

The earlier groups in this MS. are rarely signed; many of these we know to be Wiat's from other sources. But the MS. was evidently intended for his songs. When songs of other authors are entered the signatures are generally added.

## 3

(1)

I love lovyd and so dothe she,
And yet in love wee suffer still;
The cause is strange, as semeth me,
To love so well and want our will. 4

(2)

O deadly yea! o grevous smart!
Worse then refuse, unhappe gaine:
I love: whoever playd this part
To love so well and live in payn! 8

(3)

Was ever hert so well agrede
Syns love was love as I do trowe,
That in their love soo well did spede
To love so well and live in woo. 12

(4)

Thus morne wee bothe and hathe don long,
With wofull plaint and carefull voice,
Alas [alas] it is a grevous wrong,
To love so well and not reioyce. 16

1 **dothe**] MS. spelling *dotthe;* it is spelt correctly in the next poem.
2 **suffer**] MS. spelling *sufer.*
4 **our**] MS. spelling *or*, so also l. 17.
8 **love**] MS. spelling *lovve.*
11 **spede**] MS. spelling *sped.*
13 **Thus**] MS. spelling *Thes.*
15 **wrong**] MS. spelling *wrowng.*

(5)

And here an end of all our mone :
With sighinge oft my breth is skant,
Sins of myshappe ours is alone
To love so well and it to want. 20

(6)

But they that causer is of this
Of all our cares, god send them part,
That they may knowe what grefe it is
To love so well and live in smart. 24

18 oft] MS. spelling *of*.
23 knowe] MS. spelling *kowe*.
At the foot of this page, below the last verse, are some letters which are discern ible though faint, "a m how," evidently standing for "à M(argaret) How(ard)."

## 4

(1)

Suffryng in sorow in hope to attayn
Desyryng in fere, and dare not complayn,
Trew of beleffe, in whome ys all my trust,
Do thou apply to ease me off my payn,
Els thus to serve and suffer styll I must. 5

(2)

Hope ys my hold, yet in dyspayre to speke
I dryve from tyme to tyme, and dothe not kepe
How long to lyve thus after loves lust,
In studye styll of that I dare not breke
Wherefore to serve and suffer styll I must. 10

(3)

Encrease of care I fynd bothe day and nyght,
I have that was ontyme all my delyght,
The cawse thereoff ye know I have dyscust,
And yet to reffrayn yt passythe my myght,
Wherefore to serve and suffer styll I must. 15

(4)

Love who so lyst at lengthe he shall well say
"To love and lyve in fere yt ys no play,"
Record that knowythe, and yf thys be not just
That whereas love dothe live, there is no way
But serve and suffer ever styll he must. 20

(5)

Then for to live with losse of libertye,
At last perchawnce shall be his remedye,
And for his trouthe reigneth with fals mistrust,
Who wold not rew to se how wrongfully—
Thus for to serve and suffer styll he must. 25

(6)

Untrew by trust oftymes hathe me betrayd,
Mysusyng my hope, styll to be delayd,
Fortune allways I have yt fownd unjust,
And so with lyke rewarde now am I payd,
That ys, to serve and suffer still I must. 30

(7)

Never to cesse, nor yet lyke to attayn
As long as I in fere dare not complayn,
True of beleff hathe allways ben my trust
And tyll she knowythe the cause of all my payn,
Content to serve and suffer styll I must. 35

"fynys 6"

23 **reigneth**] MS. spelling *regnit*.

26 **by**] MS. spelling *be*.

In the left-hand margin, at the side of the first stanza, are the following words in Margaret Howard's handwriting, "Fforget thys," and a little lower down, "Yt ys not h(r?)"; the last word probably stands for *her*.

Mary Shelton's name is written at the foot of this page, preceded by the remark, "ondesyrid favours deserv no hyer" in the same hand.

## 5

(1)

At last withdrawe your crueltie
Or let me die at ons,
It is too much extremitie
Devised for the nons, 4
To hold me thus alive
In paine still for to dryve,
What may I more sustayne
Alas that dye wuld faine
And cannot dye for paine. 9

(2)

For to the flame wherewith ye burne
My thought and mye desyr,
When into ashys it shulde turn
My hert by fervent fyer, 13
Ye send a stormy rayn,
That dothe it quenche agayn,
And makes my Iyes expresse
The teres that do redresse
My lyff in wretchednes. 18

Spelling very bad throughout. Normal spelling given where the original is peculiar.

ll. 7–8 appear in the MS. thus—

"Whatt maye I more
Sustayne alas that dye wuld faine."

(3)

Then when thes shulde have drownde
And overwhelmed my hart,
The hart dothe then confownde
Renewing all my smart, 22
Then dothe flame encreasse,
My torment can not cease;
My woo doeth then revive,
And I remaine alyve
With Death still for to stryve. 27

(4)

But if that he wolde have my death
And that ye wolde no nother
Shortly then for to spare my breth
Withdrawe the ton or tother; 31
For thus your cruelnes
Doeth let itself dowbtles
And it is reason why
No man alyve nor I
Of double death can dy. 36

No signature of any sort.

## 6

(1)

To wette your Iye withouten teare,
And in good helth to faine desease,
That you therby myn Iye myght bleare,
Therwith your other frendes to please. 4
And tho ye thinke ye ned not feare
Yet so ye can not me apease
But as ye list, faine, flater, or glose
Ye shall not wynne if I do lose. 8

(2)

Prate and paint and spare not,
Ye know I can me worke;
And if so be ye can so not,
Be sure I do not reke; 12
And thowe ye swere it were not
I can bothe swere and speke;
By God and by this crusse
If I have the mok, ye shall have the loss. 16

No signature of any sort.
3 **therby**] MS. spelling *therbe*.
7 **glose**] MS. spelling *golse*.
9 **Prate . . . spare**] MS. spelling *Prat . . . spre*.
15 **crusse**] i.e. *cross*.

## 7

(1)

What menythe thys, when I lye alone
I tosse, I turn, I syght, I grone,
My bedd me semys as hard as stone, 3
What menys thys?

(2)

I syght, I playne contynually,
The clothes that on the bedd do ly
Always methynk they lye awry, 6
What menys thys?

(3)

In slumbers oft for fere I quake,
Ffor hete and cold, I burne and shake,
Ffor lake of slepe my hede dothe ake, 9
What menys thys?

(4)

A mornynges then when I do ryse,
I torne unto my wonted gyse,
All day after muse and devyse 12
What menys thys?

**menys**] so spelt in every stanza except the fifth (*menythe*).
10 **ryse.** 11 **gyse.** 12 **devyse**] MS. spelling *rysse, gysse, devysse.*

(5)

And if perchance by me there passe
She unto whome I sue for grace,
The cold blood forsakythe my face. 15
What menythe thys?

(6)

But yff I sytte nere her by,
With lowd voyce my hart dothe cry,
And yet my mowthe is dome and dry. 18
What menys thys?

(7)

To aske ffor helpe, no hart I have,
My tong dothe fayle what I shuld crave,
Yet inwardly I rage and rave, 21
What menys thys?

(8)

Thus have I passyd many a yere,
And many a day, tho nowght apere
But most of that that most I fere. 24
What menys thys?

This poem is followed by "fynys q^d Wyatt."

## 8

(1)

The hart and servys to yow profferd
With ryght good wyll full honestly,
Refuse yt not, syns yt ys offerd,
But take yt to you gentylly. 4

(2)

And tho it be a small present,
Yet good, consyder gracyously
The thowght, the mynd, and the entent
Of him that lovys you faythfully. 8

(3)

Yt were a thing of small effecte
To worke my wo thus cruelly,
Ffor my good wyll to be objecte,
Therfor accepte it lovyngly. 12

(4)

Payn or travell, to run or ryde
I undertake it pleasauntly,
Bid ye me go and strayte I glyde
At your commandement humbly. 16

A doubtful poem of Wiat's.
6 **gracyously**] MS. spelling *gracyowsly*.

(5)

Payne or pleasure, now may you plant
  Evyn whyche it plese yow stedfastly;
  Do whyche yow lyst, I shall not want
  To be your servant secrettly. 20

(6)

And syns so muche I do desyre
  To be your owne assuryddly,
  Ffor all my servys and my fyer
  Reward your servaunte lyberally. 24

18 stedfastly] MS. spelling *stydfastly*.
This poem is followed by "fynys," with no signature.

## 9

(1)

Farewell all my welfare,
My shoe is trode awry,
Now may I carke and care
To sing lullay by by. 4
Alas what shall I do thereto,
There is no shyffte to helpe me now. 6

(2)

Who made hytt suche offence
To love for love agayne;
God wot that my pretence
Was but to ease hys payn; 10
For I had Ruthe to see hys wo
Alas more fole why did I so? 12

(3)

Ffor he frome me ys gone,
And makes there at a game,
And hathe leffte me alone
To suffer sorow and shame. 16
Alas he ys unkynd dowbtles
To leve me thus all comfortles. 18

7 offence] MS. spelling *a fence.*

(4)

Hytt is a grevous smart
To suffer payne and sorowe,
But most grevyd my hart
He leyde his faith to borow; 22
And falshode hathe hys fayth and trowthe,
And he forsworn by many an othe. 24

(5)

All ye lovers perde,
Hath cawse to blame his dede,
Whyche shall example be
To lett yow of yowre spede; 28
Let never woman agayn
Trust to such wordes as men can sayn. 30

(6)

For I unto my cost
Am warnyng to yow all,
That they whom you trust most
Sonest dysceyve you shall; 34
But complaynte cannot redresse
Of my great greffe the great excesse. 36

Followed by "Fynys" and the sign denoting Wiat's composition, "9"
30 sayn] Dialectal West Yorkshire.

## 10

(1)

Alas poore man what hap have I
That must fforbere that I love best,
I trow it be my desteny
Never to lyve in quiet rest. 4

(2)

No wonder ys tho' I complayn,
Not withowt cawse ye may be sure,
I seke ffor that I cannot attayn,
Whyche is my mortall dysplesure. 8

(3)

Alas pore hart as in thys case
With pensyff playntes thou art opprest
Unwysse thow wert to desyre place
Where as another ys possest. 12

(4)

Do what I can to ese thy smart,
Thow wylt not let to love her styll,
Hers and not myn I se thow art
Let her do by the as she wyll. 16

15 hers] MS. spelling *hyrs*—see l. 16, *her*, correctly spelt. This stanza depends upon l. 9, "Alas pore hart."

(5)

A carefull carkace full of payn
  Now hast thow lefft to morne for the;
  The hart ons gone, the body ys slayn,
  That ever I saw her wo is me! 20

(6)

Mine Iye alas was cause of thys
  Whyche her to se had never hys ffyll
  To me that syght full bytter ys
  In recompence of my good wyll. 24

(7)

She that I sarve all other above
  Hathe payd my hyre as ye may se
  I was unhappe, and that I prove,
  To love above my pore degre. 28

fynys.

Doubtful poem.

A sign like a 16th-century *s* is often appended to poems without signature, but which are known to be Wiat's from their presence in the E. MS. This poem has no sign or signature.

## 11

(1)

Ys yt possyble,
That so hye debate,
So sharpe, so sore, and off suche rate,
Shuld end so sone that was begone so late,
Is it possyble! 5

(2)

Ys yt possyble!
So cruell intent
So hasty hete and so sone spent,
Ffrom love to hate, and thens ffor to relent,
Is it possyble! 10

(3)

Ys yt possyble!
That eny may fynde
Within oon hart, so diverse mynd,
To change or torn as wether and wynd,
Is it possyble! 15

(4)

Is it possyble!
To spye it in an Iye
That tornys as oft as chance on dy,
The trothe whereoff can eny try?
Is it possyble! 20

17 Iye] MS. spelling *yIe*.

(5)

It is possyble
  Ffor to torne so oft,
  To bryng that lowyste that was most aloft,
  And to fall hyest yet to lyght sofft,
  It is possyble. 25

(6)

All ys possyble,
  Who so list beleve;
  Trust therfore fyrst, and after preve:
  As men wedd ladyes by lycence and leve
  All ys possyble. 30

23 was] MS. spelling *wasse*.
Followed by "fynys q^d^ Wyatt."

## 12

(1)

And wylt thow leve me thus?
Say nay, say nay, ffor shame,
To save thee from the blame
Of all my greffe and grame;
And wylt thow leve me thus! 5
Say nay, say nay!

(2)

And wylt thow leve me thus,
That hath lovyd the so long,
In welthe and woo among?
And is thy hart so strong
As for to leve me thus? 10
Say nay, say nay!

(3)

And wylt thow leve me thus
That hathe gevyn the my hart,
Never for to depart,
Nother for payn nor smart;
And wylt thow leve me thus! 15
Say nay, say nay!

FACSIMILE PAGE, D. MS., FOL. 17

*Brit. Mus., Add.* 17492]

[*To face p.* 272, *Vol. I.*

## 12

(1)

And wylt thow leve me thus?
Say nay, say nay, for shame,
To save thee from the blame
Of all my grefe and grame;
And wylt thow leve me thus! 5
Say nay, say nay!

(2)

And wylt thow leve me thus,
That hath loved the so long,
In welthe and woo among?
And is thy hart so strong
As for to leve me thus? 10
Say nay, say nay!

(3)

And wylt thow leve me thus
That hathe geven the my hart,
Never for to depart,
Nother for paen ne smart;
And wylt thow leve me thus! 15
Say nay, say nay!

And woylt thow leve me thus
Say nay say nay for shame
to bere the from the blame
of all my greffe pe grame
And woylt thow leve me thus
Say nay say nay

And woylt thow leve me thus
that hath loved the so long
in wurthe pe wow among
pe yb thy hart so strong
as for to leve me thus
Say nay say nay

And woylt thow leve me thus
that hath given the my hart
entyr for to depart
notyr for peyn nor smart
And woylt thow leve me thus
Say nay say nay

And woylt thow leve me thus
pe hart nomore myne
of hym that loveth the
yelab the rentlte
pe woylt thow leve me thus
Say nay say nay

And this is the

(4)

And wylt thow leve me thus,
  And have nomore pyttye
  Of hym that lovythe the?
  Helas thy cruellte!
  And wylt thow leve me thus! 20
    Say nay, say nay!

Followed by "Fynys q^d W." ¶ For the facsimile reproduction of this poem see p. 272.

At the top right-hand side of the MS. page are the words, "and thys chefly," in Margaret Howard's handwriting to denote her appreciation of this poem.

## 13

(1)

That tyme that myrthe dyd stere my shypp,
Whyche now is frowght with hevines,
And fortune beate not then the lypp,
But was defence of my distresse,
Then in my boke wrote my maystresse, 5
" I am yowris you may well be sure
" And shall be whyle my lyff dothe dure." 7

(2)

But she her selffe whyche then wrote that,
Is now myn extreme enemye;
Above all men she dothe me hate,
Reioysyng of my myserye;
But though that for her sake I dye, 12
I shall be hers she may be sure,
As long as my lyff dothe endure. 14

(3)

It is not tyme that can were owt
With me that ons is fermly sett;
Whyle nature kepys her corse abowt
My love from her no man can lett;
Thowghe never so sore they me thrett 19
Yet am I hers she may be sure
And shall be whyle that lyff doeth dure. 21

13 hers] MS. spelling *hyers*. So l. 20.
15 were owt] i. e. *wear out*.
20 hers] MS. spelling *hyrs*.

(4)

And once I trust to see that day
Renewer of my Joy and welthe,
That she to me these wordes shall say :
" In faith welcome," to me myselffe,
" Welcome, my joy, welcome, my helthe, 26
" For I am thyne thow mayst be sure
" And shallbe whyle that lyff dothe dure." 28

(5)

Lo me alas, what woordes were these?
In covenant I myght fynd them so,
I reke not what smart or dysease
I suffred, so that I myght knoo 32
That she were myn, I myght be sure,
And shuld whyle that lyff dothe dure. 34

23 **Renewer**] MS. spelling *renuare.*
29 **these**] MS. spelling *theyse.*
A doubtful poem. The scribe who has copied this group of poems has appended Wiat's name to those which are known to be his from their presence in other MSS.

## 14

As power and wytt wyll me assyst
My wyll shall wyll evyn as ye lyst. 2

Ffor as ye lyst, my wyll is bent
In every thyng to be content,
To serve in love tyll lyff be spent
And to Reward my love thus ment 6
Evyn as ye lyst.

To fayn or fable ys not my mynd
Nor to refuse suche as I fynd,
But as a lambe of humble kynd,
Or byrd in cage, to be assynd 10
Evyn as ye lyst.

When all the flokk ys com and gone
Myn eye and hart agreythe in one,
Hathe chosyn you only alone
To be my Joy, or elles my mone 14
Evyn as ye lyst.

Joy yf pytty apere in place
Mone, if dysdayn do shew hys face
Yet crave I not as in thys case
But as ye lede, to follow the trace 18
Evyn as ye lyst.

3 refuse] MS. spelling *refuce*.

Sum in wordes muche love can fayn
  And sum for wordes gyve wordes agayn
  Thus wordes for wordes in wordes remayn
  And yet at last wordes do optayn 22
                Evyn as ye lyst.

To crave in wordes I wyll eschew,
  And love in dede I wyll ensew;
  Yt ys my mynd bothe hole and trew,
  And for my trewthe I pray yow rew 26
                Evyn as ye lyst.

Dere hart, I bydd your hart farewell
  With better hart than tong can tell;
  Yet take thys tale as trew as gospell,
  Ye may my lyff save or expell 30
                Evyn as ye lyst.

23 eschew] MS. spelling *exchew*.

Doubtful poem. "fynys," without the additional sign that marks Wiat's poems

It is in Wiat's style (cf. l. 7) but might easily be an imitation by a member of the same circle, for example, G. Boleyn or Francis Brian.

## 15

(1)

Sumtyme I syght, sumtyme I syng,
Sumtyme I lawghe, sumtyme mornynge,
As one in dowte, thys ys my ssayying:
Have I dysplesyd yow in any thyng? 4

(2)

Alake what aylythe you to be grevyd?
Ryght sory am I that ye be mevyd,
I am your owne yf trewthe be prevyd
And by your dyspleasure as one myschevyd.

(3)

When ye be mery then am I glad,
When ye be sory then am I sad,
Such grace or fortune I wold I had
Yow for to plese however I were bestad. 12

(4)

When ye be mery why shuld I care,
Ye are my Joye and my wellfare,
I wyll you love, I wyll not spare
Into yowre presens as farr as I dare. 16

1 syght] i.e. *sigh*.

(5)

All my poore hart and my love trew
  Whyle lyff dothe last I gyve yt yow;
  And yow to serve with servys dew,
  And never to change yow for no new. 20

fynys.

Doubtful. No indicating sign of Wiat's production.

## 16

(1)

* Pacyence of all my smart
Ffor fortune is tornyd awry;
Pacyence must ese my hart
That mornes continually; 4
Pacyence to suffer wrong
Ys a pacyence to long. 6

(2)

Pacyence to have a nay
Of that I most desyre,
Pacyence to have allway
And ever burne like fyre; 10
Pacyence withowt desart
Is grownder of my smart. 12

(3)

Who can with mery hart
Set faithe sum plesant song,
That always felys but smart
And never hathe but wrong; 16
Yet pacyence evermore
Must hele the wound and sore. 18

18 wound] MS. spelling *wownd*.
* Adapted from Serafino, *Patententia alla malora*.

(4)

Pacyence to be content
With froward fortunes trayne,
Pacyence to the intent
Sumwhat to slake my payne; 22
I se no remedy
But suffer pacyently. 24

(5)

To playn wher ys none ere
My chance is chawnsyd so,
Ffor it dothe well apere
My frend ys tornyd my foo; 28
But syns there ys no defence
I must take pacyence. 30

(6)

Who wold have ever thowght
A hart that was so sett,
To have suche wrong me wrowght,
Or to be cownterfett; 34
But who that trustythe most
Ys lyke to pay the cost. 36

(7)

I must of force, God wott
Thys paynfull lyff susteyne,
And yet I know nott
The chefe cawse of my payn; 40
Thys ys a strange dyssese,—
To serve and never plese. 42

(8)

I must of force endure
  Thys drawght drawyn awry,
  Ffor I am fast and sure
  To have the mate therby; 46
  But note I wyll thys texte
  To draw better the nexte. 48

Probably Wiat s.
The extra sign denoting a poem by Wiat is added after the word "fynys.

## 17

(1)

In faythe methynkes yt ys no ryght
To hate me thus for lovyng ye,
So fayre a face, so full of spyght,
Who wold have thowght suche crueltye;
But syns ther is no remedye, 5
That by no meanes ye can me love,
I shall you leve and other prove. 7

(2)

Ffor yff I have for my good wyll
No reward eles but cruelltye,
In faythe thereoff I can no skyll
Sythe that I lovyd ye honestlye;
But take hede I wyll tyll I dye 12
Or that I love so well agayn,
Syns women use so muche to fayn. 14

This fragment is answered by Antony Lee on the opposite page of the MS beginning thus—

"And sure I thynke yt ys best way
To love for love alyke agayn
And not to make ernest of play
As I to love and she to ffayn."

## 18

(1)

The knot which fyrst my hert did strayn,
When that your servant I becam,
Doth bynd me still for to remain
Allwayes your owne, as now I am;
And if you fynd that I do fayne, 5
With just jugement my selfe I dam
To have dysdain. 7

(2)

If other thought in me do groo
But styl to love you stedfastlye,
If that the proff do not well shoo
That I am yours asurydly,
Let every wellth turne me to woo, 12
And you to be continually
My chefest foo. 14

(3)

If other love or new Request
Doo ese my hart, but only this,
Or if within my weryd brest
Be hyd on thought that mene amys,
I do desyer that myn unrest 19
May styll increse, and I to mys
What I love best. 21

4 **Allwayes**] MS. spelling *all was.*
11 **asurydly**] MS. spelling *a sorydly.* The normal spelling is given in text.

(4)

If in my love ther be oon spott
Of false desaytt or dobylnes,
Or if I mynd to slyp thys knot
By want of faithe or stedfastnes,
Let all my sarvyes be for nott 26
And when I wold have chef redres
Estem me nott. 28

(5)

But if that I consume in paine
Of burning syghes, and fervent love,
And daly seke no nother gayne
But with my ded these wordes to prove,
Methink of ryght I shuld obtayn 33
That ye wold mynd for to remove
Your gret disdayn. 35

(6)

And for the end of this my song
Unto your handes I do submit
My dedly greffe, and payns so strong,
Whych in my hert be fermly shytt;
And when ye lyst, redres me wrong, 40
Sens well ye know this paynfull ffytt
Hath last tto long. 42

ffynys.

30 Of] Version 2, *With*.

This poem occurs twice in this MS., on fol. 23, and again on fol. 33, where it comes amongst a group of poems, all known to be Wiat's except two, and all written in the same handwriting. The last poem of the group, fol. 38b, is signed "T. Wiat."

## 19

(1)

It was my choyse it was no chance
That browght my hart in others holde
Wherby ytt hath had sufferaunce
Lenger perde then Reason wold
Syns I ytt bownd where ytt was free
Me thinkes ywys of ryght yt shald
Acceptyd be. 7

(2)

Accepted be withowte refuse,
Unles that fortune have the power,
All ryght of love for to abuse;
For, as they say: one happy howre
May more prevayle than Ryght or Myght. 12
Yf fortune then list for to lowre
What vaylyth Ryght! 14

(3)

What vaylyth Ryght yff this be true?
Then trust to chaunce and go by gesse
Then who so lovyth may well go sew
Uncerten Hope for hys redresse.
Yett some wold say, assuredly: 19
Thou mayest appele for thy relesse
To Fantasy. 21

(4)

To Fantasy pertaynys to chose :
All thys I knowe, for fantasy
Ffurst unto love dyd me induse;
But yet I knowe as stedefastly
That yff love have no faster knott, 26
So nyce a choyse slippes sodenly,
Yt lastyth not. 28

(5)

Ytt lastyth not that stondes by change;
Fansy doth change : fortune ys frayle :
Both thes to plese the way ys strange;
Therfore me thynkes best to prevayle,
There ys no way that ys so just, 33
As trowgh to lede, tho tother fayle,
And therto trust. 35

31 way] MS. spelling *ways*.

The first poem of the group known to be Wiat's from other sources, the last of which is signed "T. Wiat."

## 20

(1)

So unwarely was never no man cawght
With stedefast loke apon a goodly face
As I of late; for sodenly, me thowght,
My hart was torne owte of hys place. 4

(2)

Thorow myn Iye the strock frome hers did slyde
Dyrectly downe unto my hert it ranne;
In helpe wherof the blood therto did glyde,
And left my face boeth pale and wann. 8

(3)

Then was I like a man for woo amasyd,
Or like the byrde that flyeth into the fyer;
For whyll that I on her beaulte gasyd,
The more I burnt in my desyre. 12

(4)

Anon the blowd stert in my face agayn,
Enflamed with hete that yt had att my hert,
And browght therwith therowt in every vayne
A quakynd hete with plesaunt smert. 16

This poem is included in Tottel's Miscellany.

1 **So unwarely**] T. transpose.

4 **hys place**] T. *his proper place.* The harmony of the verse is spoiled by this addition, for the last line is four-foot throughout.

8 **face**] MS. *place*, sense requires *face*, see l. 13.

11 **on her**] T. *upon her.* Note that T. regards *beauty* as two syllables, Wiat as three, *bĕaŭltÿe.*

(5)

Then was I like the strawe, when that the flame
Ys drevyn therin by force and rage of wynd;
I can nott tell alas what I shall blame,
Nor what to seke nor what to fynd. 20

(6)

But well I wote the greffe holdes me so sore
In hete and cold betwyxt hope and drede,
That but her helpe to helth doeth me restore
Thys restles lyff I may nott lede. 24

(Signed "W.")

21 **holdes me so sore**] T. *doth hold me sore.*
22 **betwyxt hope**] T. *betwixt both hope.*
23 **doeth me restore**] T. *to me restore.*

## 21

How shuld I
Be so pleasaunt
In my semblaunt
As my fellowes be. 4

(1)

Not long agoo
It chanced soo
As I ded walk alone,
I herd a man 8
That now and than
Himself did thus bemone : 10

(2)

" Alas," he saide
" I am betrayde
" And utterly undone,
" Whom I did trust 14
" And think so just
" Another man hath wone. 16

There are two versions of this poem in D., an incomplete version, fol. 43, in Margaret Howard's handwriting, and another in the large group, fol. 77. The first version contains the following stanza inserted after stanza 3, and stanzas 5, 6 and 8, are absent.

The following verse was naturally omitted by a politic courtier, singing before ladies—

Love did assyn
Her to be myn
And not to love no nue
But who can bynd
Their feckell kynd
That never wyll be tru.

(3)

" My servise due
" And hert so true
" On her I did bestow,
" I never ment 20
" Ffor to repente
" In welth nor yet in woo." 22

(4)

Eche westerne winde
Hath torned his minde
And blowen it clene away,
Therby my welth 26
My mirth and helth
Are dryven to grete dekay. 28

(5)

Fortune did smyle
A right shorte while
And never saide me naye;
With pleasaunt plaes 32
And joyfull dayes
My tyme to passe awaye. 34

(6)

Alas, ah las
The tyme so was
So never shall it be,

24 **his**] probably error for *her*.

Sins she is gone 38
And I alone
Armeles as ye may see. 40

(7)

Where is the oth
Where is the troth
That she to me did gyve?
Such fayned wordes 44
With selie boordes
Let no wise man beleve. 46

(8)

For even as I
Thus wofully
Unto myself complaine,
If ye then truste 50
Nedes lerne ye muste
To sing my song in vayne 52

How shuld I
Be so pleasaunt
In my semblaunt
As my fellowes be. 56

## 22

(1)

Full well yt maye be sene
To suche as understand,
How some there be that wene
They have theyre welth at hand,
Thoruhe loves abusyd band; 5
But lytell do they see
Th'abuse wherin they bee. 7

(2)

Of love there ys a kynd
Which kyndlythe by abuse,
As in a feble mynd,
Whome fansy may enduce
By loves dysceatefull use, 12
To folowe the fond lust,
And prove of a vayn trust. 14

(3)

As I myself may saye
By tryall of the same,
No wyght can well bewray
The falsyed love can frame;
I saye, twyxt grefe and game, 19
Ther is no lyvyng man
That knows the crafte love can 21

(4)

Ffor love so well can fayn
To favour for the whyle,
That suche as sekes the gayn
Ar servyd with the gyle;
And some can thys concyle, 26
To gyve the symple leave
Them selfes for to dysceave 28

(5)

What thing may more declare
Of love the craftye kynd,
Than see the wyse, so ware,
In love to be so blynd.
If so yt be assynd, 33
Let them enjoye the gayn,
That thynkes yt worth the payne. 35

## 23

(1)

Syns love ys suche, that as ye wott,
Cannot always be wysely usyd
I say therfore then blame me nott,
Tho I therin have ben abusyd; 4
Ffor as with cause I ame accusyd,
Gyllty I graunt, suche was my lott
And tho yt cannot be excusyd
Yet let suche folye be forgott 8

(2)

Ffor in my yeres of rekles youthe
Me thought the power of love so gret
That to her lawes I bound my trouthe
And to my wyll there was no lett. 12
Me lyst no more so far to fett
Suche frute lo as of love ensewthe
The gayn was small that was to gett
And of the losse the lesse the reuthe 16

(3)

And few there ys but fyrst or last
A tyme in love ones shall they have;
And glad I am my tyme ys past
Henceforthe my fredome to withsave. 20

Idiomatic inferences after verbs *to be*: *was to get* = *was to be got*.

Now in my hart there shall I grave
The groundyd grace that now I tast;
Thankyd be fortune that me gave
So fayre a gyfft, so sure and fast. 24

(4)

Now suche as have me sene ere thys
When youthe in me sett forthe hys kynd,
And foly framd my thought amys,
The fawte wherof now well I ffynde, 28
Loo, syns that so yt ys assynd
That unto eche a tyme there ys,
Then blame the lott that led my mynd
Sometyme to lyve in loves blys. 32

(5)

But frome henceforthe I do protest,
By presse of that that I have past,
Shall never ceace within my brest
The power of love so late owtcast. 36
The knott thereof ys knytt ffull fast,
And I therto so sure proffest,
Ffor evermore with me to last
The power wherin I am possest. 40

ffinis.

## 24

(1)

Lo how I seke and sew to have
That no man hathe, and may be had!
There ys more but synk or save
And bring thys doute to good or bad. 4
To lyve in sorrows, allways sad,
I lyke not so to linger fforthe,
Hap evyll or good I shallbe glad
To take that comes as well in worthe. 8

(2)

Shold I sustayn this great dystres,
Styll wandryng forthe thus to and froo
In dredfull hope to hold my pese,
And fede my sellf with secret woo? 12
Nay, nay, certayne I wyll not soo
But sure I shall my selfe aply
To put in profe this doute to knoo
And rydd thys daunger redely. 16

(3)

I shall assay by secret sute
To show the mynd of myn entent,
And my desertes shall gyve suche frute
As with my hart my wordes be ment. 20
So by the profe of thys consent
Sone, out of doute, I shall be sure,
For to rejoyce or to repent
In joye or payn for to endure. 24

ffinis.

## 25

Syns so ye please to here me playn,
And that ye do rejoyce my smart,
Me lyst no lenger to remayn
To suche as be so overthwart. 4

But cursyd be that cruell hart
Whyche hathe procuryd a careles mynd
For me, and myn unfaynyd smart,
And forcythe me suche fautes to fynd. 8

More than to muche I am assuryd
Of thyn entent, wherto to trust;
A spedles proffe I have enduryd,
And now I leve yt to them that lust. 12

ffinis.

This poem is preceded by "My love ys lyke unto theternall fyre, Epigram No. 27

## 26

(1)

Now must I lerne to lyve at rest
And weyne me of my wyll,
For I repent where I was prest
My fansy to fullfyll. 4

(2)

I may no lenger more endure
My wonted lyf to lede,
But I must lerne to put in ure
The change of Womanhede. 8

(3)

I may not see my servys long
Rewardyd in suche wyse,
Nor I may not sustayn suche wrong
That ye my love dyspyse 12

(4)

I may not sighe in sorows depe
Nor wayle the want of love,
Nor I may nother cruche nor crepe
Wher hyt dothe not behove. 16

(5)

But I of force must nedes forsake
My faythe so fondly sett,
And frome henceforthe must undertake
Suche foly to fforgett 20

12 **dyspyse**] MS. spelling *dyspyce*.

(6)

Now must I seke som other ways
My self for to withsave,
And as I trust by myn assays
Som remedy to have. 24

(7)

I aske none other remedy
To recompense my wronge
But ons to have the lyberty
That I have lakt so long. 28

Followed by "ffinis." This last small group of poems begins with "So feble is the threde," and ends with "Fforget not yet." The group contains several poems known to be Wiat's from other sources. There is no doubt that the whole group consists of his poems.

## 27

(1)

Fforget not yet the tryde entent,
Of suche a truthe as I have ment,
My great travayle so gladly spent, 3
Fforget not yet.

(2)

Fforget not yet when fyrst began,
The wery lyffe ye know syns when,
The sute, the servys, none tell can, 6
Fforget not yet.

(3)

Fforget not yet the gret assays,
The cruell wrong, the skornfull ways,
The paynfull pacyence in denays, 9
Fforget not yet.

(4)

Fforget not yet, forget not thys,
How long ago hathe ben, and ys
The mynd, that never ment amys, 12
Fforget not yet.

(5)

Fforget not then thyn owne aprovyd,
The whyche so long hathe thee so lovyd,
Whose stedfast faythe yet never movyd, 15
Fforget not thys.

## 28

O myserable sorow withowten cure
Yf it plese the lo to have me thus suffir,
At lest yet let her know what I endure,
And this my last voyse cary thow thether
Wher lyved my hope now ded for ever; 5
For as ill grevus is my banyshement
As was my plesure whan she was present 7

finis.

No signature.

fol. 58.

## 29

(1)

Blame not my lute for he must sound,
Of thes and that as lyketh me,
For lake of wit the lute is bownd
To geve suche tunes as plesithe me; 4
Tho my songes be sumwhat strange,
And spekes suche wordes as toche thy change 6
Blame not my lute.

(2)

My lute alas doeth not ofend,
Tho that perforce he must agre
To sownd suche tunes as I entend,
To sing to them that hereth me; 10
Then tho my songes be somewhat plain,
And tochethe some that use to fain, 12
Blame not my lute.

(3)

My lute and stringes may not deny
But as I strike they must obey
Brake not them then so wrongfully
But wreke thyselff som wyser way 16
And tho the songes whiche I endight
To qwytt thy change with rightfull spight 18
Blame not my lute.

1 lute] the normal MS. spelling. It varies in the refrain between *lute* and *lutte*.

6 spekes] MS. spelling. Note the occasional use of the northern plural ending *-es* in this MS.

At the end of St. 3, at the foot of fol. 64, is the signature "W" for Wiat.

(4)

Spyght askyth spyght and changing change,
And falsyd faith must nedes be knowne,
The faute so grett, the case so strange
Of ryght it must abrode be blown; 22
Then sins that by thyn own desartt
My songes do tell how trew thou artt 24
Blame not my lute.

(5)

Blame but the selffe that hast mysdone,
And well desarvid to have blame;
Change thou thy way so evyll begone
And then my lute shall sownd that same; 28
But if tyll then my fyngeres play
By thy desartt, ther wontyd way 30
Blame not my lute.

(6)

Farewell, unknown, for tho thou brake
My strynges in spight, with grett desdayn,
Yet have I fownd owtt for thy sake
Stringes for to stringe my lute agayne. 34
And if perchance this sely rhyme
Do make thee blushe at any tyme, 36
Blame not my lute.

fol. 64.

20 nedes] MS. *indes.*

24 songes] MS. *soinges.*

25 mysdone, 27 begone] MS. *mysdown, bygown.*

35 rhyme] MS. *rymyne.*

This ends the miscellaneous poems inserted singly or in small groups, and comes immediately after a group of poems entered between 1540–50 by Surrey's group of friends.

# POEMS FROM THE DEVONSHIRE MS.

## PART II

### I

If with complaint the paine myght be exprest,
That inwardelye dothe cause me sygh and grone,
Your harde herte and your cruell brest
Shulde sygh and playne for my unreste; 4
And tho it ware of stone,
Yet shulde remorse cause it relent and mone. 6

But sins yt ys so farre out of mesure
That with my wordes I can yt not contayne;
My onlye truste, my hertes tresure!
Alas whye doo I still indure 10
This resteles smerte and payne,
Sins yf ye list ye maye my woo restraine. 12

The poems of this group with one exception are signed with the interlaced initials "T V" (*i. e.* Thomas Viatus), which are appended to the autograph poems in the E. MS.

## 2

(1)

Sins you will nedes that I shall sing,
Take yt in worth such as I have;
Plentye of plaint, mone and morning
Yn depe dispaire, and dedlye payne, 4
Boteles for boote, crying to crave
To crave yn vayne. 6

(2)

Suche hammers worke within my hed
That sounde nought els into my eris,
But faste at borde, and wake abed;
Suche tune the temper to my song 10
To waile my wrong, that I wante teris
To waile my wrong. 12

(3)

Deth and dispaire afore my face
My dayes dekaes, my grefe doeth gro;
The cause therof is in this place
Whom crueltye dothe still restraine 16
For to rejoise, tho yt be wo
To here me plaine. 18

4 dedlye] MS. spelling *delye*.

(4)

A brokin lute, untunid stringes
With such a song maye well bere parte,
That nother pleasith him that singes,
Nor theim that here, but her alone, 22
That with her herte wold straine my herte
To here it grone. 24

(5)

Yf it greve you to here this same,
That you do fele but in my voyse,
Considre then what plesaunt game
I do sustayne in everye parte, 28
To cause me sing or to rejoyse
Within my herte. 30

("T V")

The words "and thys" written above the poem in Lady Margaret's handwriting.

3

(1)

What shulde I saye,
Sins faithe is ded,
And truth awaye,
From you ys fled,
Shulde I be led, 5
With doblenesse?
Naye, naye, mistresse! 7

(2)

I promiside you,
And you promisid me,
To be as true,
As I wolde be.
But sins I se 12
Your doble herte,
Farewell my parte! 14

(3)

Though for to take
Yt ys not my minde
But to forsake,
* * * *
And as I finde 18
So will I truste
Farewell, uniuste! 20

Fol. 77.
5–6] written in one line in the MS.
The fourth line is wanting in the third stanza.

(4)

Can ye saye naye?
But you saide
That I all waye
Shulde be obeide,
And thus betraide 25
Or that I wiste
Farewell, unkiste. 27

("T V.")

## 4

(1)

Gyve place all ye that doth rejoyse
And loves panges hathe clene forgot,
Let them drawe nere and here my voyse
Whom love doth force in paynes to ffett; 4
For all of playnte my song is sett,
Wich long hathe served and nought can gett. 6

(2)

A faithefull herte so trulye mente
Rewardid is full slenderelye,
A stedfaste faithe with good entente
Ys recompensid craftelye; 10
Such hap doeth hap unhappelye,
To them that mene but honestelye. 12

(3)

With humble sute I have assayde
To torn her cruell hertid minde,
But for rewarde I am delaide
And to mye welthe her eris are blynde; 16
Lo thus bye chaunse I ame assignid
With stedfast love to serve the unkinde. 18

16 her] MS. spelling *here*.

(4)

What vaylith troth or stedfastenesse
Or still to serve without repreffe?
What vayleth faith or gentilnesse
Where crueltie doeth rayne as cheife? 22
Alas ther is no greter greeff,
Than for to love and lake releffe. 24

(5)

Care doth constraine me to complaine
Of love and her uncertaintye,
Wich grauntith nought but gret disdayne,
For losse of all my libretye. 28
Alas this is extremytye
For love to finde suche crueltye! 30

(6)

For hertye love to finde such crueltie
Alas it is a carefull lott;
And for to voide so fowle a mok
Ther is no way but slip the knott. 34
The gayne so cold, the payne so hott,
Prayse yt who list, I like yt not. 36

("T V.")

20 repreffe] i. e. *reprieve.*

The Sonnet "Dyvers dothe use" follows, and at the foot of the page is the following quatrain—

"The losse is small to lose such on
And they mokith for a blinde naye
And wyt thei lak that wolde mak mone
Tho all such payne were wipid away."

("T V.")

## 5

(1)

Me list no more to sing
Of love nor of suche thing
Howe sore that yt me wring;
For what I song or spake
Men dede my songis mystake. 5

(2)

My songes ware to defuse,
Theye made folke to muse;
Therefor, me to excuse,
Theye shall be song more plaine,
Nothr of joye nor payne, 10

(3)

What vailith then to skipp
At fructe over the lipp,
For frute withouten tast
Dothe noght but rott and waste. 14

(4)

What vaylith under kaye
To kepe treasure alwaye
That never shall se daye?
Yf yt be not usid,
Yt ys but abusid. 19

This poem is clearly written in a satiric strain.

(5)

What vayleth the flower,
  To stond still and whithr;
  Yf no man yt savour,
  It servis onlye for sight
  And fadith towardes night. 24

(6)

Therefore fere not tassaye
  To gadre ye that maye,
  The flower that this daye
  Is fresher than the next;
  Mark well I saye, this text. 29

(7)

Let not the frute be lost
  That is desirid moste,
  Delight shall quite the coste;
  Yf hit be tane in tyme
  Small labour is to clyme. 34

(8)

And as for such tresure,
  That makith thee the richer,
  And no dele the porer,
  When it is geven or lente
  Methinkes yt ware well spent. 39

(9)

If this be undre miste,
And not well playnlye wyste,
Undrestonde me who lyste;
For I seke not a bene,
I wott what I doo meane. 44

("T V.")

## 6

(1)

The Joye so short alas, the paine so nere,
The waye so long, the departure so smart,
The furst sight alas I bought to dere,
That so sodainelye now from hens must parte.
The bodye gone, yet remaine shall the hert 5
With her, that which for me salte teris ded raine,
And shall not chaunge till that we mete againe. 7

(2)

The tyme doeth passe, yet shall not my love;
Tho I be farre, alwayis my hert is nere;
Tho other chaunge, yet will I not remove;
Tho other care not, yet love I will and fere;
Tho other hate, yet will I love my dere; 12
Tho other woll of lightnes saye adewe
Yet woll I be founde stedefast and trewe. 14

(3)

When other laugh, alas then do I wepe,
When other sing, then do I waile and crye;
When other runne, perforcyd I am to crepe;
When other daunce, in sorro I do lye;
When other joye, for paine welnere I dye; 19
Thus brought from welth alas to endles paine,
That undeservid, causeles to remayne. 21

("T V.")

## 7

*Payne of all payne the most grevous paine
Ys to love hartelye and cannot be loved againe.

(1)

Love with unkindenesse is cause of hevenis
Of inwarde sorro and sighis painefull.
Whereas I love is no redresse
To no maner of pastime, the sprites so dull
With privy morninges, and lokes rufull;
The boddye all wrislye the color pale and wan,
More like a gost than like a lyving man 7

(2)

When Cupido hath enflamed the hertes desyres
To love there as ys disdayne,
Of guerdon ill, the mynde oblivyous,
Nothing regarding but love tattayne,
Alwais imagining by what meane or traine
Yt may be at rest, thus in a momente
Now here, now there, being never contente. 14

(3)

Tossing and torning, when the bodye wold rest,
With dreamis opprest and visions fantasticall,
Sleping or waking, love is ever preste,
Some tyme to wepe, some tyme to crye and call,
Bewayling his fortune and lif bestiall;
Now in hope of recure, and now in despaire,
This ys a sorye lyf to lyve alwaye in care. 21

* Printed for the first time.
6 color] MS. spelling *collor*.

(4)

Recorde of Terence in his remedis poeticall :
Yn love ys Jelosy, and inimis mannye on,
Angre, and debate, with mynde sensuall,
Nowe warre now peace, musing all alone;
Some tyme all morte and colde as anye stone.
This causith unkyndenesse of suche as cannot skill
Of trewe love assurde with herte and good will. 28

(5)

Lucrece the Romaine * for love of her lorde
And byecause perforce she had commit advowtrye
With Tarquinus, as the storye doth recorde,
Herself did slee with a knif most pituoslye
Among her nigh frendes; bye cause that she
So falslye was betrayd, lo this was the guerdon,
Wheras true love hath no domynyon 35

(6)

To make so ferefull of olde antiquitye
What nedeth it? We see by experience.
Among lovers it chaunceth daylye
Displeasor and variance for none offens :
But if true love myght gyve sentens,
That unkyndenes and disdayne shuld have no place
But true harte, for true love, yt ware a gret grace! 42

22 Terence] MS. *therence.*
29 * Lucretia. See Chaucer *L. G. W.*
her lorde] MS. *or lorde*, but sense requires *her.*

(7)

O Venus, Ladye, of Love the goddesse
  Help all true lovers to have love agayne
  Bannishe from thye presens disdayne and unkyndenesse,
  Kyndnesse and pytie to thy servise retayne
  For true love, ons fixed in the cordiale vayne
  Can never be revoulsid by no maner of arte
  Unto the sowle from the boddye departe. 49

("T V.")

49 Unto] i. e. *Until.*

## 8

(1)

*Lament my losse, my labor, and my payne,
All ye that here mye wofull playnte and crye;
If ever man myght ons your hert constrayne
To pytie wordes of right, yt shuld be I, 4
That sins the tyme that youthe in me ded rayne,
My pleasaunte yeres to bondage did aplye,
Wiche as yt was I purposed to declare
Wherebye my frendes hereafter maye be ware. 8

(2)

And if perchaunce some reders list to muse,—
What menith me so playnlye for to wright,
My good entente the fawte of that shall skuse,
Wiche meane nothing, but trulye to endyght 12
The crafte and care, the greef and long abuse
Of lovers lawe, and eke for punisshmente mighte,
Wiche though that man oft tymes bye paynis doth kno,
Lyttle theye wot wiche wayes the gylis doth grow! 16

(3)

Yet well ye kno, that will renne my smart
Thus to reherse the paynes that I have past,
My hand doth shake, my pen skant doth his parte,
My boddye quakes, my wyttis begynne to waste. 20

* Printed for the first time.
7 declare] MS. *declarre.*
16 gylis] i. e. *guiles.*

Twixt heate and colde, in fere I fele my herte
Panting for payne, and this, as all agaste
I do remayne, skant wotting what I wryght
Perdon me then, kyndelye, tho I endite. 24

(4)

And patientely, O reader, I the praye
Take in good parte this worke as yt ys mente,
And greve thee not with ought that I shall saye,
Sins with good will this boke abrode ys sente, 28
To tell men howe in youthe I ded assaye
What love ded mene, and nowe I yt repente,
Yet moving me my frendes might well be ware,
And kepe them free from all such payne and care. 32

("T V.")

22 Panting] MS. *pay panting*, with first word crossed out.

## 9

(1)

Spight hath no power to make me sadde,
Nor scornefulnesse to make me playne,
Yt doth suffise that ons I had,
And so to leve yt is no payne. 4

(2)

Let theim frowne on that leste dothe gaine,
Who ded rejoyse must nedes be glad,
And tho with wordis thou wenist to rayne
Yt doth suffise that ons I had. 8

(3)

Sins that in chekes thus overthwarte
And coylye lookis thou doste delight,
Yt doth suffise that myne thou warte,
Tho change hath put thye faith to flight. 12

(4)

Alas, it is a pevishe spight
To yelde thiself and then to parte,
But sins thou seiste thie faith so light
Yt doeth suffise that myne thou warte. 16

9 overthwarte] MS. spelling *overtwawete.*

(5)

And sins thye love doth thus declyne,
  And in thye herte suche hate doeth grow,
  Yt doeth suffise that thou warte myne,
  And with good will I quite yt so. 20

(6)

Some tyme my frend, farewell my foo,
  Sins thou change I am not thyne,
  But for relef of all my woo
  It doeth suffise that thou warte myne. 24

(7)

Prayeng you all that heris this song
  To judge no wight, nor none to blame;
  Yt dothe suffise she dothe me wrong
  And that herself doth kno the same 28

(8)

And tho' she chaunge it is no shame
  Theire kinde it is and hathe bene long;
  Yet I proteste she hath no name,
  Yt dothe suffise she doth me wrong. 32

("T V.")

29 chaunge] MS. *chang*.

The words "and thys" written at the side of this poem in Margaret Howard's hand.

## 10

A ! my herte, a ! what aileth the
To sett so light my libertye,
Making me bonde when I was fre. 3
A my herte a ! what aileth thee.

When thou ware rid from all distresse,
Voyde of all paine and pensifnesse,
To chose againe a new mistresse. 6
A my herte a ! what aileth thee.

When thou ware well, thou could not hold
To torne agayne that ware too bolde,
Thus to renue my sorowes olde. 9
A my herte a ! what aileth thee.

Thou knoist full well that but of late
I was tornid out of loves gate,
And now to guide me to this mate ! 12
A my herte a ! what aileth thee.

I hopte full well all had ben done,
But now my hope is tane and won,
To my torment to yelde so sone. 15
A my herte a ! what aileth thee.

("T V.")

11

Hate whom ye list for I kare not:
Love whom ye list and spare not:
Do what ye list and drede not:
Think what ye liste I fere not:
For as for me I am not, 5
But even as one that reckes not,
Whyther ye hate or hate not;
For in your love I dote not,
Wherefore I pray you forget not,
But love whom ye liste, for I care not. 10

("T V.")

## 12

*Grudge on who liste, this ys my lott
No thing to want if it ware not

(1)

My yeris be yong even as ye see,
All thinges therto doeth well agre,
Yn faithe, in face, in eche degre
Nothing doth want as semith me, 4
If yt ware not.

(2)

Som men dothe say that frendes be skarce,
But I have founde as in this cace
A frend wiche gyveth to no man place,
But makis me happiest that ever was, 8
If it ware not.

*Refrain.* Grudge on who list this is my lot
No thing to want if yt ware not.

(3)

A hart I have besidis all this,
That hath my herte and I have his;
If he doeth well yt is my blis,
And when we mete no lak ther is 12
If it want not.

* Printed for the first time.

(4)

If he can finde that can me please,
A thinckes he dois his owne hertes ease;
And likewise I could well apease
The chefest cause of his misease, 16
If it ware not.

*Refrain* Grudge on who list this is my lot
No thing to want if it ware not.

(5)

A master oke God hath me sente
To have my will, is hollye lente
To serve and love, for the entente
That bothe, we myght be well contente, 20
If it ware not.

(6)

And here an end, it doeth suffise
To speke fewe wordes among the wise;
Yet take this note before your eyes:
My mirth shulde double ons or twise 24
If it ware not.

*Refrain.* Grudge on who list, this is my lot
No thing to want if it ware not.

## 13

(1)

*Greting to you both yn hertye wyse
As unknowen I sende, and this mye entente
As I do here, you to advertyse,
Lest that perchaunce your deades you do repente.
The unknowen man dredes not to be shente 5
But sayes as he thinks: so fares it bye me,
That nother ffere nor hope in no degre. 7

(2)

The bodye and the sowle is helde togidder,
Yt is but right, and reason woll the same,
And fryndelie the oon to love the other,
Yt encresith your beautye and also your fame;
But marke well my wordes, for I fere no blame, 12
Truste well yourselves, but ware ye trust no mo
For suche as ye think your frende, may fortune be your ffoo. 14

(3)

Beware frendelye ere ye have enye nede,
And to frendes reconsilide trust not greatelye;
For they that ons with hastie spede
Exiled themselves oute of your companye,
Tho theye torne againe and speke farelye, 19
Fayning themselves to be your frendes faste,
Beware of them for thye will disseyve you at laste. 21

* Printed for the first time.
11 **beautye**] MS. *beute.*
21 **disseyve**] MS. *disseyeve.*

(4)

Fayre wordes makis foolys fayne,
And bering in hande causith moche woo;
For tyme tryeth trothe, therefore refrayne:
And from suche as be redye to doo:—
None doo I name but this I kno, 26
That bye this faute cause causith moche,
Therefore beware if yo do know anye suche. 28

(5)

"To wise folkes few wordes" is an old sayeng,
Therfore at this tyme I will write nomore,
But this short lesson take for a warning,
By soche light frendes set littill store;
If ye do otherwise ye will repent it sore; 33
And thus of this lettre making an ende,
To the boddye and the sowle I me commend. 35

(6)

Wryting lyfles at the manner place
Of him that hath no chave nor nowere dothe dwell;
But wandering in the wilde worlde wanting that he hase,
And nothr hopis nor ffearis heven nor hell;
But lyveth at adventure ye kno him full well. 40
The twentie daye of marche he wrote yt yn his house,
And hathe him recommendyd to the kat and the mowse. 42

("T V.")

22 wordes] MS. spelling *woodes*.

## 14

(1)

Tanglid I was in loves snare,
Oprest with payne, torment with care;
Of grefe right sure, of joye full bare,
Clene in dispaire bye crueltye; 4
But ha! ha! ha! full well is me,
For I am now at libertye.

(2)

The wofull daye so full of paine,
The werye nyght all spent in vayne,
The labor lost for so small gayne;
To wryte them all yt wyll not be, 8
But ha! ha! ha! full well is me,
For I am now at libertye.

(3)

Everything that faire doeth sho,
When prof is made it proveth not soo,
But torneth mirthe to bittre woo,
Wich in this case full well I see; 12
But ha! ha! ha! full well is me
For I am now at libertye.

(4)

To grete desire was my guide,
And wanton wyll went bye my syde;
Hope rulid still, and made me byde
Of loves craft thextremitye. 16
But ha! ha! ha! full well is me
For I am now at libertye.

(5)

With faynid wordes that ware but winde,
To long delayes I was assind:
Her wylye lokes my wyttes ded blinde:
Thus as she wolde I ded agree. 20
But ha! ha! ha! full well is me
For I am now at libertye

(6)

Was never birde tanglid in lyme,
That brake awaye yn better tyme,
Then I that rotten bowes ded clyme,
And had no hurte but scaped fre. 24
Now ha! ha! ha! full well is me
For I am nowe at libertye.

("T V.")

17 that] MS. *wt.*

## 15

(1)

Longer to muse
On this refuse
I will not use,
But studye to forget; 4
Lett my all goo,
Sins well I kno,
To be my foo
Her herte is fermely sett. 8

(2)

Sins my entente,
So trulye mente,
Cannot contente
Her minde as I do see; 12
To tell you playne,
Yt ware in vayne,
For so small gaine
To lose my libertie, 16

(3)

For if he thryve
That will goo stryve
A shipp to dryve
Againste the streme and winde, 20
Undoutedlye
Then thryve shulde I
To love trulye
A cruel hertid mynde. 24

(4)

But sith that so
The worlde doeth goo
That everyè woo
Bye yelding doth incresse, 28
As I have tolde
I wilbe bolde
Therbye my paynis to cese. 31

(5)

Praying you all
That after shall
Bye fortune fall
Ynto this folishe trade, 35
Have yn your minde
As I do finde,
That oft be kinde
All womens love do fade. 39

(6)

Wherefore a pace
Come, take my place,
Some man that hase
A lust to berne the fete; 43
For sins that she
Refusith me,
I must agre
And perdye to forgett. 47

("T V.")

## 16

(1)

Love doth againe
Put me to payne
And yet all is but lost,
I serve yn vayne 4
And am certayne
Of all, mislikid most. 6

(2)

Both heate and colde
Doth so me holde
And combred so my minde,
That when I shulde 10
Speke and beholde
It dryveth me still behinde. 12

(3)

My wittis be paste,
My lif doeth waste,
My comforte is exild,
And I in haste 16
Am lyke to taste
How love hathe me begilde. 18

(4)

Onles that right
Maye yn her sight
Obtaine pitye and grace,
Whye shulde a wight 22
Have bewtye bright
Yf mercye have no place? 24

(5)

Yett I alas
Am in soche cace
That bak I cannot goo,
But still forth trace 28
A patiente pace
And suffre secret woo, 30

(6)

Ffor with the winde
My fyred mynde
Doth still inflame,
And she unkinde 34
That ded me binde
Doth torne yt all to game. 36

(7)

Yet may no payne
Make me refraine
Nor here and there to range,
I shall retaine 40
Hope to obtayne
Her hert that is so straunge. 42

(8)

But I require
The paynefull fire
That oft doth make me swete,
For all my yre, 46
Withe lyke desire
To gyve her herte a hete 48

(9)

Then shall she prove
Howe I her love,
And what I have offerde,
Wiche shulde her move 52
For to remove
The paynes I have suffrd. 54

(10)

And better ffe
Than she gave me
She shall of me attayne,
For whereas she 58
Showde crueltye,
She shall my hert obtayne. 60

(Signed "T V.")

44 paynefull] MS. *payne full.*
The words "and thys" at the head of this poem in Margaret Howard's writing.

## 17

(1)

With serving still
This have I wone,
For my goodwyll
To be undon. 4

(2)

And for redresse
Of all my payne,
Disdaynefulnes
I have againe. 8

(3)

And for reward
Of all my smarte,
Lo, thus unharde
I must departe! 12

(4)

Wherefore all ye
That after shall
Bye ffortune be
As I am, thrall, 16

(5)

Example take,
What I have won
Thus for her sake
To be undone! 20

("T V.")

## 18

(1)

Now all of change
Must be my songe,
And from mye bonde nowe must I breke,
Sins she so strange
Unto my wrong
Doth stop her eris to here me speke. 6

(2)

Yet none doth kno
So well as she
My greffe wiche can have no restrainte;
That faine wolde follo
Nowe nedes must fle,
For faute of ere unto my playnte. 12

(3)

I am not he
By fals assayes
Nor faynid faith can bere in hande,
Tho most I see
That such alwaies
Are best for to be understonde. 18

6 to] written twice in the MS.

(4)

But I that truth
Hath alwaies mente,
Doeth still procede to serve in vayne,
Desire pursuith
My tyme mispent,
And doeth not passe upon my payne. 24

(5)

O fortunes might
That eche compellis,
And me the most yt doeth suffice
Now for my ryght
To aske nought ells,
But to withdraw this enterprise : 30

(6)

And for the gaine
Of that good howre,
Wiche of my woo shall be relefe,
I shall refrayne
Bye paynefull powre,
The thing that must have bene my grefe. 36

(7)

I shall not miss
To exersyse
The helpe therof that doth me teche,
That after this
In any wise
To kepe ryght within my reche. 42

(8)

And she injuste,
Which ferith not,
Yn this her fame to be defilyd,
Yett ons I trust
Shalbe my lott,
To quite the craft that me begilid. 48

("T V.")

The words "lerne but to syng yt" are written at the head of this poem in Margaret Howard's writing.

## 19

Dryven bye desire I dede this dede,
To daunger myself without cause whye,
To trust the untrue not lyke to spede,
To speke and promise faithefullie.
But now the proof dothe verifie, 5
That who so trustithe ere he kno,
Dothe hurte himself and please his ffoo. 7

("T V.")

In Tottel.

## 20

(1)

Perdye I saide it not
Nor never thought to do,
As well as I ye wott,
I have no powre therto : 4
And if I ded, the lott
That first ded me enchain
Do never slake the knott,
But strayte it to my payne. 8

(2)

And if I ded, eche thing
That maye do harme or woo,
Contynuallye maye wring
My herte wherso I goo; 12
Reporte may alwayes ring
Of shame of me for aye,
Yf yn my herte ded spring
The worde that ye doo saye. 16

(3)

If I saide so, ech sterre
That is in heven above,
Maye frowne on me to marre
The hope I have yn love; 20

This is the eighth entry of the long group of poems. The first seven are poems found in the earlier part of the E. MS.

At the top of the poem, in the margin, are the words "and thys," in Lady Margaret's hand.

And if I ded, such warre
As they brought out of Troye,
Bring all my lyff afarre
From all this lust and joye. 24

(4)

And if I ded so say,
The bewtye that me bound
Encresst from daye to daye
More cruell to my wounde; 28
With all the mone that may,
To playnte may torn my song;
My lif may sone dekay,
Without redresse bye wrong. 32

(5)

Yf I be clere fro thought
Whye do ye then complaine?
Then ys this thing but sought
To torne me to more payne. 36
Then that that ye have wrought,
Ye must it now redresse,
Of right therefore ye ought,
Such rigor to represse. 40

24 this] T. *his.*
37 Then that] T. *then this.*

(6)

And as I have deservid,
So graunte me nowe my hire;
Ye kno I never swervid,
Ye never fownd me lyre. 44
For Rachell have I servid,
(For Lya carid I never)
And her I have reservid
Within my herte for ever. 48

(Signed with interlaced initials "T V.")

St. 6. Note play upon words in *lyer* and *Lya*.
46 The parenthesis is Wiat's.

## 21

(1)

Absens absenting causithe me to complaine
My sorofull complayntes abiding in distresse,
And departing most pryvie encreasithe my paine;
Thus lyve I uncomfortid, wrappid all in hevenes. 4

(2)

In hevenes I am wrappid, devoyde of all solace,
Nothr pastyme nor pleasure can revyve my dull wytt,
My sprites be all taken, and dethe doeth me menace,
With his fatall knif the thrid for to kitt. 8

(3)

For to kitt the thrid of this wretchid liff
And shortelye bring me owt of this cace,
I se yt avaylith not, yet must I be pensif,
Sins fortune from me hathe turnid her face. 12

(4)

Her face she hathe turnid with cowntenance contrarious,
And clene from her presens she hath exiled me,
Yn sorowe remayning, as a man most dolorous,
Exempte from all pleasure and worldelye felicitie. 16

(5)

All worldelye felicitye now am I pryvate,
And left in deserte most solitarelye,
Wandring all about, as on withoute mate;
My deth aprochith, what remedye: 20

(6)

What remedye, alas, to rejoise my wofull herte,
With sighis suspiring most rufullie;
Nowe wellcome, I am redye to deperte,
Farewell all plesure welcome paine and smerte. 24

("T V.")

## 22

(1)

When that I call unto my mynde
The tyme of hope that ons I hade,
The great abuse that ded me blinde
Dothe force me allwaies to be sad.
Yet of my greef I fayne me glad; 5
But on assured I was to bolde
To trust to such a slipper holde. 7

(2)

I thought yt well that I had wrought,
Willing forthwith so to ensue,
But he that sekis as I have sought,
Shall finde most trust oft tymes untrue,
For lest I reckte what most I rue; 12
Of that I thought my help most sure
Ys nowe the wante of all my cure. 14

(3)

Amiddes my welthe I ded not reke,
But sone alas ere that I wiste,
The tyme was come that all to weake,
I had no powre for to resiste; 18
Nowe am I prof to them that liste
To flee such woo, and wrongfull paine,
As in my hert I do sustayne. 21

13 help] MS. *hilp*.

(4)

For faynid faithe is alwaies free,
And dothe inclyne to be onjuste,
That sure I thinck there can none bee
To moche assurid without mistruste;
But hap what maye, to them that muste 26
Enflame suche cruell destenye
Wythe patiens for remedye. 28

(5)

As I am on, livith bye restrainte
Abides the tyme of my retorne,
Yn hope that fortune bye my playnte
Wyll slake the fire wherewith I bourne;
Sins no waies eles maye serve my torne, 33
Yet for the dowt of this distresse,
I aske but ryght for my redresse. 35

("T V.")

## 23

(1)

To make an ende of all this strif
No longer tyme for to sustaine,
But now withe dethe to chaunge the lif
Of him that lyves alwaies in payne;
Dispaire such powre hathe in his hande, 5
That helpeth most I kno certeyne
Maye not withstonde. 7

(2)

Maye not withstonde that is electe
Bye fortunis most extremytie,
But all in worthe to be excepte
Withouten lawe or libretye;
What vaylithe then unto my thought? 12
Yf right can have no remedie.
There vaylith nought. 14

(3)

There vayleth nought, but all in vaine,
The fawte thereof maye none amende
But onlie dethe, for to constraine
This spightfull hap to have an ende,—
So grete disdaine dothe me provoke, 19
That drede of deth cannot deffende
This dedelye stroke. 21

(4)

This dedelye stroke, wherby shall seace
The harbord sighis within my herte,
And for the gifte of this relese
My hand in haste shall playe his parte,
To doo this cure againste his kinde, 26
For chaunge of lif from long desert
To place assignid. 28

(5)

To place assignid for ever more,
Nowe bye constrainte I do agre
To loose the bonde of my restore,
Wherein is bounde my liberte;
Dethe and dispaire doeth undretake 33
From all mishap now hardilye
This ende to make. 35

("T V.")

## 24

(1)

Wyll ye se what wonderous love hathe wrought,
Then come and loke at me;
There nede no where els to be sought,
Yn me ye maye theim see. 4

(2)

For unto that that men maye see
Most monstruous thing of kinde,
My self may best compared bee,
Love hath me so assignid. 8

(3)

There is a rok in the salte floode,
A rok of suche nature,
That drawithe the yron from the woode,
And leveth the ship unsure. 12

(4)

She is the rok, the ship ame I,
That rok my dedelie ffoo,
That draweth me there, where I muste die,
And robbith my harte me froo. 16

(5)

A birde there flieth and that but on,
  Of her this thing ensueth,
  That when her dayes be spent and gone,
  With fyre she reneweth. 20

(6)

And I with fire may well compare
  My love that is alone,
  The flames whereof doth aye repare
  My lif when yt is gone. 24

("T V.")

25

(1)

Deme as ye list upon goode cause
I maye and think of this or that,
But what or whye my self best knowes
Wherebye I thinck and fere not; 4
But thereunto I maye well think
The doubtefull sentence of this clause,
I wolde yt ware not as I think,
I wolde I thought yt ware not. 8

(2)

For if I thought yt ware not soo,
Though it ware so yt greved me not;
Unto my thought yt ware as tho
I harkened tho I here not. 12
At that I see, I cannot wynk,
Nor from mye thought so let it goo;
I wolde it ware not as I think,
I wolde I thought yt ware not. 16

(3)

Lo how my thought might make me free
Of that perchaunce that nedeth nott,
Perchaunce no doubt the drede I see
I shrink at that I bere not; 20

But in my harte this word shall sink :
Unto the proffe maye better be,
I wolde yt ware not and as I think,
I wolde I thought yt ware not. 24

(4)

Yf yt be not, show no cause whye
I shoulde so think, then care I not;
For I shall so my self applie
To bee that I apere not; 28
That is as one that shall not shrink
To be your owne untill I dye;
And if yt be not as I think,
Lyke wyse to think yt is not. 32

("T V.")

22 Unto] i.e. *until.*

## 26

(1)

I am as I am and so will I be,
But how that I am none knoith trulie,
Be yt evill be yt well, be I bonde be I fre,
I am as I am and so will I be. 4

(2)

I lede my lif indifferentelye,
I meane nothing but honestelie,
And though folkis judge full dyverslye,
I am as I am and so will I dye. 8

(3)

I do not rejoyse not yet complaine,
Bothe mirthe and sadnes I doo refraine,
And use the meane sins folkes will fayne,
Yet I am as I am be it plesure or payne. 12

(4)

Dyvers do judge as they doo troo,
Some of pleasure and some of woo,
Yet for all that no thing they knoo,
But [I] am as I am where so ever I goo. 16

(5)

But sins judgers do thus dekaye,
Let everye man his judgement saye;
I will yt take in sporte and playe,
For I am as I am who so ever saye naye. 20

16 I am as] MS. omits *I* (evident error).

(6)

Who judgeth well, well God him sende;
  Who judgeth evill, God them amende;
  To judge the best therefore intende,
  For I am as I am and so will I ende. 24

(7)

Yet some there be that take delight
  To judge folkes thought for envye and spight,
  But whyther they judge me wrong or right,
  I am as I am and so do I wright. 28

(8)

Praying you all that this doo rede,
  To truste yt as you doo your crede,
  And not to think I change my wede,
  For I am as I am howe ever I spede. 32

(9)

But how that is I leve to you;
  Judge as ye list false or true;
  Ye kno no more than afore ye knewe;
  Yet I am as I am whatever ensue. 36

(10)

And from this mynde I will not flee,
  But to you all that misjuge me,
  I do proteste as ye maye see,
  That I am as I am and so will I bee. 40

("T V.")

27 judge] MS. *jude.*

## 27

Patiens for I have wrong,
And dare not show whereyn,
Patiens shall be my song,
Sins truthe can no thing wyn. 4
Patiens for this fytt,
Here after comis not yett. 6

This is the only entry without signature; it is written in a hand which does not ccur elsewhere in the MS.

## POEMS ABSENT FROM THE E. AND D. MSS.

### I

*To whom should I sue to ease my payne?
To my mystres? Nay, nay, certayne,
For feare she should me then disdayne.
I dare not sue, I dare not sue!

When I should speake to my mystres,
In hope for to get redres,
* * * * *
When I should speake, when I should speake. 8

What hap had I that suffereth payne,
And if I myght her grace attayne:
Or els she would here me complayne,
What hap had I, what hap had I. 12

I fly, for feare to be espyed
Or of evil wil to be destroyed,
The place wher I would faynest abyde,
I fly for feare, I fly for feare. 16

Though I were bold, who should me blame
Love caused me to do the same.
With honesty it were no shame,
Though I were bold, though I were bold. 20

* From the Court of Venus, it follows "My lute awake," and precedes "Dysdaine me not"; it will be seen that the phrasing, and the whole motif of the poem is Wiat's style.

7] omitted.

And here an end, wyth ful glad wyl
  In purpose for to serve her styl,
  And for to part thinke none yl,
  And here an end, and here an end. 24

## 2

Dysdaine me not without desert
Nor leave me not so sodeynly,
Sence wel ye wot that in my hart
I meane nothing but honesty, 4
Dysdayne me not.

Refuse me not without cause why
Nor thynke me not to be uniust,
Since that by lot of fantasye
The careful knott nedes knyt I must, 8
Refuse me not

Mystrust me not, though some therbe
That fayne would spot my stedfastnesse,
Beleve them not seyng that ye se
The profe is not as they expresse : 12
Mystrust me not.

Forsake me not til I deserve
* * * *
Nor hate me not til I swerve,
For syth you knew what I intend 16
Forsake me not.

*Variants in Tottel.*

Tottel omits refrain.
4 **nothing but honesty**] T. *ye not but honestly.*
10 **my**] so T. CV. *thy.*
11 **seyng**] T. *sins.*
14] Omitted. T. *Nor hate me not tyll I offend.*
15 **Nor . . . swerve**] T. *Destroy me not tyll that I swerve.*
16 **For syth**] T. *but sins.*

Dysdayne me not being your owne :
Refuse me not that I am so true :
Mystrust me not til al be knowen :
Forsake me never for no new. 20
Disdayne me not.

*Variants in Tottel.*
17 being] T. *that am.*
18 I am] T. *am.*
20 never] T. *not ne.*

## 3

## T. Wyat. Of Love

(1)

Lyke as the wynde with raging blaste
Dothe cawse eche tree to bowe and bende,
Even so do I spende my tyme in wast
My lyff consumyng into an ende. 4

(2)

For as the flame by force doeth quenche the fyer,
And runninge streames consume the rayne,
Even so do I myself desyer,
To augment my greffe and deadly payne. 8

(3)

Where as I fynde that whot is whot,
And colde is colde, by course of kynde,
So shall I knet an endles knot.
Such fruite in love alas I fynde. 12

(4)

When I foresaw those christall streames
Whose bewtie dothe cause my mortall wounde,
I lyttyll thought within those beames
So swete a venim for to have founde. 16

(5)

I fele and see my owne decaye,
As one that bearethe flame in his brest,
Forgetfull thought to put away,
The thynge that breadeth my unrest, 20

(6)

Lyke as the flye dothe seke the flame,
And afterwarde playeth in the fyer,
Who fyndeth her woo, and sekethe her game,
Whose greffe dothe growe of her owne desyer. 24

(7)

Lyke as the spider dothe drawe her lyne,
As labor lost so is my sute
The gayne is hers the losse is myne,
Of evell sowne seade suche is the frute. 28

## 4

### Epitaph of Sir Thomas Gravener Knight

Under this stone ther lyeth at rest
A frendly man, a worthie knight
Whose hert and mynde was ever prest
To favor truthe to farther ryght. 4

The poores defence, his neigbors ayde,
Most kynde alwayes unto his kyne
That stint all servys that myght be stayed,
Whose gentell grace great love dyd wyne. 8

A man that was full ernest sett
To serve his prince at all assayes:
No sycknes coulde hym from that lett
Which was the shortnynge of his dayes. 12

His lyf was good, he dyed full well;
The body here, the soule in blys.
With lenght of wordes whie shoulde I tell
Or farther shewe that well knowne is? 16
Sins that the tears of more and lesse
Rightwell declare his worthynes.

At the foot of this poem is written, "Vivit post funera virtus" with signature "W."

5

Like as the byrde in the cage enclosed
The dore unsparred and the hawke withowte
Twixte deth and prison piteously oppressed
Whether for to chuse standeth in dowte :
Certes so do I which do seke to bring aboute
Which should be best by determination
By losse of lyff, lybertye, or lyff by prison. 7

Oh, myscheffe by myscheffe to be redressed
Wher payne is the best ther lyeth little pleasure,
By short deth oute of daunger yet to be delyvered
Rather than with paynfull lyff, thraldom, and doloure,
For small pleasure moche payne to suffer;
Soner therfore to chuse me thincketh it wysdome
By losse of lyff lybertye then lyff by prison. 14

By lengthe of lyff yet shulde I suffer
Adwayting time and fortunes chaunce :
Manye thinges happen within an howre :
That which me oppressed may me advaunce :

1 in] T. *within.*
2 and the hawke] T. *her foe the hawke.*
5 Certes so do I which do] T. *Lo so do I which seke.*
9 the best] T. *best.*
10 oute of daunger yet to be] T. *better to be.*
11 Rather than with] T. *Than bide in.*
12 For small . . . suffer] T. *Small is the pleasure where much payne we suffer.*
13 Soner] T. *rather.*
it wysdome] T. omits *it.*
15 By . . . suffer] T. *And yet methinkes although I live and suffer.*
16 Adwayting time] T. *I do but wait a time.*
17 Manye . . . howre] T. *Oft many thinges do happen in one houre.*
18 That . . . oppressed] T. *That which oppressed me now.*

In time is trust, which by dethes grevaunce
Is utterlye lost: then were it not reason
By deth to chuse libertye, and not lyff by prison. 21

But deth were deliveraunce, in lyff lengthe of payne;
Of two ylles, let see nowe chuse the best,
This birde to deliver, you that here her playne,
Your advise you lovers! which shalbe best?
In cage in thraldome, or by hawke to be opprest?
And which for to chuse make playne conclusion
By losse of lyff lybertye, or lyff by prison? 28

20 utterlye] T. *wholly.*
22 in lyff lengthe of payne] T. *where life lengthes paine.*
23 Of two ylles] T. *Of these two ewyls.*
24 you . . . playne] T. *that here doth playne.*
25 Your advise you lovers] T. *What saye ye lovers?*
best] T. *the best.*
26 in thraldome] T. omits *in.*
hawke to be opprest] T. *the hawke opprest.*
27 for to chuse] T. omits *for.*

## 6

Stond who so list upon the slipper toppe
Of courtes estates, and let me here rejoyce;
And use me quyet without lett or stoppe,
Unknownen in Courte that hath such brackishe joyes : 4

In hidden place so lett my dayes forthe passe,
That when my yeres be done, withouten noyse,
I may dye aged after the common trace. 7

For hym death greep' the right hard by the croppe
That is moche knowen of other; and of himself, alas,
Doth dye unknowen, dased with dreadfull face. 10

1 toppe] T. *whele.*
2 courtes estates] T. *hye astate.*
3 And use . . . stoppe] T. *And use my life in quietuesse eche dele.*
4 such brackishe joyes] T. *the wanton toyes.*
5 so lett . . . passe] T. *my time shall slowly passe.*
6 That . . . done] T. *And . . . past.*
7 I may die aged] T. *Let me dye olde.*
8 For] MS. *from.*
8–10 T. "For gripes of death doth he to hardly passe
That knowen is to all: but to himself alas
He dyeth unknowen, dased with dreadfull face."

## FROM TOTTEL'S "SONGES AND SONETTES"

### I

Accused though I be without desert,
Sith none can prove, beleve it not for true:
For never yet, since that you had my hert,
Intended I to false or be untrue. 4

Sooner I would of death sustayn the smart
Than break one word of that I promised you:
Accept therfore my service in good part;
None is alyve that can yll tonges eschew; 8

Hold them as false, and let not us depart
Our frendship olde, in hope of any new.
Put not thy trust in such as use to fayn,
Except thou mynde to put thy frend to payn. 12

In Tottel only.

## 2

(1)

Passe forth my wonted cryes
Those cruell eares to pearce,
Which in most hatefull wyse
Doe styll my plaintes reverse. 4
Doe you my teares, also
So wet her barrein hart,
That pitye there may grow,
And crueltie depart. 8

(2)

For though hard rockes among
She semes to have bene bred,
And of the Tigre long
Bene nourished and fed; 12
Yet shall that nature change,
If pitie once win place
Whan as unknowen and strange,
She now away doth chase. 16

(3)

And as the water soft
Without forcyng or strength,
Where that it falleth oft,
Hard stones doeth perse at length: 20
So in her stony hart
My plaintes at last shall grave,
And rigour set apart,
Winne grant of that I crave. 24

(4)

Wherefore my plaintes, present
  Styll so to her my sute
  As ye, through her assent
  May bring to me some frute. 28
  And as she shall me prove,
  So bid her me regarde,
  And render love for love,
  Which is a just reward. 32

## 3

(1)

Your lokes so often cast,
Your eyes so frendly rolde,
Your sight fixed so fast,
Alwayes one to behold : 4
Though hyde it fain ye would :
It plainly doth declare
Who hath your hart in hold,
And where good will ye bare. 8

(2)

Fayn would ye finde a cloke
Your brennyng fire to hyde :
Yet both the flame and smoke
Breakes out on every side : 12
Yee can not love so guide
That it to issue winne.
Abrode nedes must it glide,
That brens so hote within. 16

(3)

For cause your self do wink
Ye judge all other blinde :
And secret it you think
Which every man doth finde. 20
In wast oft spend ye winde
Your self in love to quit :
For agues of that kinde
Will show, who hath the fit. 24

(4)

Your sighes yow fet from farre
And all to wry your wo :
Yet ar ye nere the narre,
Men ar not blinded so. 28
Depely oft swere ye no :
But all those othes ar vaine.
So well your eye doth showe
Who puttes your hert to paine. 32

(5)

Thinke not therfore to hide
That still it selfe betrayes,
Nor seke meanes to provide
To darke the sunny daies; 36
Forget those wonted waies :
Leave of such frowning chere :
There will be found no stayes
To stoppe a thing so clere. 40

27 nere] $T_2$. *neare*. The first reading is correct, meaning *never*.

## 4

(1)

Synce love wyll nedes that I shall love,
Of very force I must agree :
And since no chance may it remove
In welth and in adversitie, 4
I shall alway my self apply
To serve and suffer paciently.

(2)

Though for good will I finde but hate,
And cruelty my life to wast,
And though that still a wretched state
Should pine my dayes unto the last : 8
Yet I professe it willingly
To serve and suffer paciently.

(3)

For since my hart is bound to serve,
And I not ruler of mine owne,
What so befall, till that I sterve,
By proofe full well it shall be knowne, 12
That I shall still myself apply
To serve and suffer paciently.

The refrain is an oft-repeated moral uttered by Wiat. It is found in Seneca's proverbs, "Dolor patientia vincetur," "Payne is overcome by paciens," translated and printed 1547, and inscribed to "Fraunceys Bryan Kt."

(4)

Yea though my grief finde no redresse
But still increase before mine eyes:
Though my rewarde be cruelnesse
With all the harme, happe can devise: 16
Yet I professe it willingly
To serve and suffer paciently.

(5)

Yea though fortune her pleasant face
Should shew, to set me up aloft:
And streight my wealth, for to deface;
Should writhe away, as she doth oft: 20
Yet would I styll myself apply
To serve and suffer paciently.

(6)

There is no grief, no smart, no wo
That yet I fele, or after shall,
That from this mynde may make me go:
And whatsoever me befall, 24
I do professe it willingly
To serve and suffer paciently.

## 5

(1)

For want of will, in wo I playne,
Under colour of sobernesse :
Renewyng with my sute my payne,
My wanhope with your stedfastnesse. 4
Awake therfore of gentlenesse :
Regard at length I you require
The sweltyng paynes of my desire. 7

(2)

Betimes who geveth willingly,
Redoubled thankes aye doth deserve;
And I that sue unfaynedly
In frutelesse hope, alas, do sterve;
How great my cause is for to swerve : 12
And yet how stedfast is my sute
Lo here ye see, where is the frute? 14

(3)

As hounde that hath his keper lost,
Seke I your presence to obtayne,
In which my hart deliteth most,
And shall delight though I be slayne.
You may release my band of payne. 19
Lose then the care that makes me crye
For want of helpe or els I dye. 21

7 The] $T_2$ *my*.

(4)

I dye, though not incontinent,
By processe yet consumingly
As waste of fire which doth relent,
If you as wilfull wyll denye.
Wherfore cease of such crueltye, 26
And take me wholy in your grace,
Which lacketh will to change his place 28

24 relent] *i. e.* melt away, or become less intense, as a fire which expends its heat.

## 6

(1)

If ever man might him avaunt
Of fortunes frendly chere,
It was my selfe I must it graunt
For I have bought it dere. 4
And derely have I helde also
The glory of her name,
In yelding her such tribute, lo,
As did set forth her fame. 8

(2)

Sometyme I stode so in her grace,
That as I would require,
Ech joy I thought did me imbrace
That furdered my desire. 12
And all those pleasures lo had I,
That fansy might support;
And nothing she did me denye
That was to my comfort. 16

(3)

I had, what would you more perdee,
Ech grace that I did crave:
Thus fortunes will was unto me
All thing that I would have. 20
But all to rathe, alas the while,
She built on such a ground:
In little space, too great a guyle
In her now have I found. 24

(4)

For she hath turned so her whele
That I, unhappy man,
May waile the time that I did fele
Wherwith she fedde me than. 28
For broken now are her behestes,
And pleasant lokes she gave;
And therefore now all my requestes
From peril can not save.

(5)

Yet would I well it might appere
To her my chiefe regard:
Though my desertes have ben to dere
To merite such reward. 36
Sith fortunes will is now so bent
To plage me thus pore man,
I must myself therwith content
And beare it as I can. 40

## 7

(1)

When first mine eyes did view and marke
Thy faire beawtie to beholde :
And when mine eares listned to hark
The pleasant wordes that thou me tolde : 4
I would, as then, I had been free
From eares to hear, and eyes to see. 6

(2)

And when my lips gan first to move
Wherby my hart to thee was knowne :
And when my tong did talk of love
To thee that hast true love down throwne : 10
I would my lips and tong also
Had then bene dum, no deale to go. 12

(3)

And when my handes have handled ought
That thee hath kept in memory :
And when my fete have gone and sought
To find and get thy company : 16
I would eche hand a fote had bene
And I eche foote a hand had sene. 18

(4)

And when in mynde I did consent
To folow this my fansies will :
And when my hart did first relent
To tast such bayt my life to spyll : 22
I would my hart had bene as thyne,
Orels thy hart had bene as mine. 24

## 8

(1)

Mystrustfull mindes be moved
To have me in suspect,
The troth it shalbe proved
Which time shall once detect. 4

(2)

Though falshed go about
Of crime me to accuse,
At length I do not doute
But truth shall me excuse. 8

(3)

Such sawce as they have served
To me without desart,
Even as they have diserved
Therof God send them part. 12

## 9

(1)

I see that chance hath chosen me
Thus secretely to live in paine,
And to an other geven the fee
Of all my losse to have the gayn. 4
By chance assinde thus do I serve,
And other have that I deserve.

(2)

Unto myself sometime alone
I do lament my wofull case,
But what availeth me to mone?
Since troth and pitie have no place 8
In them, to whom I sue and serve:
And other have that I deserve.

(3)

To seke by meane to change this minde
Alas, I prove it will not be;
For in my hart I cannot finde
Once to refrain, but still agree 12
As bounde by force, alway to serve:
And other have that I deserve.

(4)

Such is the fortune that I have
To love them most that love me lest:
And to my pain to seke and crave
The thing that other have possest. 16

So thus in vain alway I serve,
And other have that I deserve.

(5)

And till I may apease the heate,
If that my happe will happe so well,
To waile my wo my hart shall freate,
Whose pensiv pain my tong can tell. 20
Yet thus unhappy must I serve
And other have that I deserve.

## 10

Through out the world if it were sought,
Faire wordes enough a man shall finde;
They be good chepe they cost right nought,
Their substance is but onely winde. 4
But well to say, and so to mene,
That swete accord is seldom sene. 6

## 11

*Lover.* It burneth yet, alas, my hartes desire.
*Lady.* What is the thing that hath inflamed thy hert?
*Lover.* A certain point as fervent as the fyre.
*Lady.* The heate shall cease of that thou wilt convert. 4
*Lover.* I cannot stoppe the fervent raging yre.
*Lady.* What may I do if thyself cause thy smart?
*Lover.* Heare my request alas with weping chere
*Lady.* With right good wyll, say on: lo, I thee here. 8

*Lover.* That thing would I that maketh two content.
*Lady.* Thou sekest perchance of me that I may not.
*Lover.* Would God, thou wouldst as thou maist well assent.
*Lady.* That I may not, thy grief is mine: God wot. 12
*Lover.* But I it fele, what so thy wordes have ment.
*Lady.* Suspect me not, my wordes be not forgot.
*Lover.* Then say alas! shall I have help? or no?
*Lady.* I see no time to answer yea but no. 16

7 alas . . . chere] $T_2$. *and new weeping chere.*
12 thy] $T_2$. *the.*

*Lover.* Say ye, dere hert, and stand no more in dout.
*Lady.* I may not grant a thing that is so dere.
*Lover.* Lo, with delayes thou drives me still about.
*Lady.* Thou wouldest my death, it plainly doth appere. 20
*Lover.* First may my hart his bloode, and life blede out.
*Lady.* Then for my sake alas, thy will forbere.
*Lover.* From day to day thus wastes my life away.
*Lady.* Yet for the best suffer some small delay. 24

*Lover.* Now good say yea : do once so good a dede.
*Lady.* If I sayd yea what would therof ensue?
*Lover.* A hert in pain of succour so should spede
Twixt yea, and nay, my doubte shall styll renew; 28
My swete say yea : and do away this drede.
*Lady.* Thou wilt nedes so? be it so : but then be trew.
*Lover.* Nought would I els, nor other treasure none.
Thus, hartes be wonne by love, request, and mone. 32

## 12

Suffised not (Madame) that you did teare
My wofull hart, but thus also to rent
The weping paper that to you I sent,
Wherof eche letter was written with a teare. 4
Could not my present paines, alas, suffise
Your greedy hart? and that my hart doth fele
Tormentes that prick more sharper then the stele,
But new and new must to my lot arise? 8
Use then my death. So shal your cruelty,
Spite of your spite rid me from all my smart,
And I no more such tormentes of the hart
Fele as I do. This shalt thou gain thereby. 12

1 teare] T. *teare,*
2 to rent] T. *to rent:* Tottel's punctuation is extremely faulty; it has been revised throughout.

## 13

Speake thou and spede where will or power ought helpthe
Where power doth want will must be wonne by welth.
For nede will spede, where will workes not his kinde,
And gayne, thy foes thy frendes shall cause thee finde. 4
For sute and golde what do not they obtaine,
Of good and bad the triers are these twaine. 6

1 helpthe] $T_2$. *helpth.*

## 14

(1)

If thou wilt mighty be, flee from the rage
Of cruell wyll, and see thou kepe thee free
From the foule yoke of sensuall bondage;
For though thy Empyre stretche to Inlian sea
And for thy feare trembleth the fardest Thylee, 5
If thy desire have over thee the power,
Subject then art thou and no governour. 7

(2)

If to be noble and high thy mind be meved,
Consider well thy grounde and thy beginnyng;
For he that hath eche starre in heaven fixed,
And geves the Moone her hornes and her eclipsyng,
Alike hath made thee noble in his working: 12
So that wretched no way thou may be,
Except foul lust and vice do conquer thee. 14

(3)

All were it so thou had a flood of gold
Unto thy thirst, yet should it not suffice;
And though with Indian stones, a thousande folde
More precious then can thy self devise
Ycharged were thy backe: thy covitise 19
And busye bytyng yet should never let,
Thy wretched life ne do thy death profet. 21

## *TABLE OF FIRST LINES FROM THE EGERTON MS., WITH APPROXIMATE DATES OF COMPOSITION AND THE VARIOUS SOURCES*

| First Lines. | P. | Structure. | E. | D. | A. | P. | Harl. | Pr. | T. | Source. | Approx. dates. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Behold love thy power how she dispiseth | 1 | Rondeau | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. "Or vedi Amor." Madrigale | 1527–28 |
| What vaileth trouth or by it to take payn | 1 | Rondeau | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| Cesar when that the traytor of Egipt | 2 | Sonnet | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. "Cesare poi che'l traditor." Sonnet | ,, |
| The longe love that in my thought doeth harbar | 3 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. "Amor che nel pensier." Sonnet | ,, |
| Alas the greiff and dedly wofull smert | 4 | 6-line st.: aababb | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | 1528–32 |
| Who so list to hount I know where is an hynde | 8 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Petrarch. Una cerva candida. Sonnet | ,, |
| O restful place reneewer of my smart | 8 | | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch (adapted) | ,, |
| Myne olde dere en'my my frowerd master | 11 | Troilus st. | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Quel antiquo mio dolce. Sonnet | ,, |
| Was I never yet of your love grevèd | 17 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch, Io non fu d'amor. Sonnet | ,, |
| Eche man me telleth I chaunge moost my devise | 18 | Sonnet | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| Farewell the rayn ot crueltie . . | 19 | Octos. Quatrains | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| If amours faith an hert unfayned . | 20 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. S'una fede amorosa. Sonnet | ,, |
| Ffarewell love and all thy lawes for ever | 21 | Sonnet | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| My hert I gave the not to do it payn | 22 | Sonnet | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Il cor ti diedi. Sonnet | ,, |
| Ffor to love her for her lokes lovely | 23 | Rondeau | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | Clement Marot. D'estre amoureux. Rondeau | ,, |
| Ther was never ffile half so well filed | 24 | Sonnet | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| Helpe me to seke for I lost it ther . | 25 | Rondeau | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Yf it be so that I forsake the . . | 26 | Rondeau | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | Clement Marot. "S'l est ainsy." Rondeau | ,, |
| Thou hast no faith of him that hath none | 27 | Rondeau | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | Cf. Clement Marot. "Amor et foi." Rondeau | ,, |
| Goo burnyng sighes unto the frosen hert | 28 | Rondeau | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. "Ite calde sospiri." Sonnet | ,, |
| It may be good like it who list . | 29 | Octos. 7-line st. | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |

## *TABLE OF FIRST LINES FROM THE EGERTON MS.*

| First Lines. | P. | Structure. | E. | D. | A. | P. | Harl. | Pr. | T. | Source. | Approx. dates. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Resound my voyse ye wodes that here me plain | 30 | Troilus st. | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | Serafino. "L'aer che senti." Strambotto | 1528–32 |
| In faith I wot not well what to say . | 31 | Octos. 7-line st. | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| Som fowles ther be that have so perfaict sight | 32 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. "Son animali." Sonnet | ,, |
| Bicause I have the still kept fro lyes and blame | 33 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | | Petrarch. Perch'io t'abbia guerdato. Sonnet | ,, |
| I fynde no peace and all my warr is done | 34 | Sonnet | √ | √ | — | √ | — | | | Petrarch. Pace non trovo | ,, |
| Though I my self be bridilled of my mynde | 35 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| My galy charged with forgetfulnes . | 36 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. "Passe la nave." Sonnet | ,, |
| Avysing the bright bemes of these fayer Iyes | 37 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Mirando'l sol. Sonnet | ,, |
| Ever myn happ is slack and slo in comyng | 38 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Mia ventura al venir. Sonnet | ,, |
| Love and fortune and my mynde remembr | 39 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Amor fortuna e la mia. Sonnet. | ,, |
| How oft have I my dere and cruel foo | 40 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Mille fiate o dolce mia. Sonnet. | ,, |
| Like to these unmesurable montayns | 41 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Sannazaro. Simile a questi. Sonnet | 1531–32 |
| Madam withowten many wordes (with "Aunswer") | 42 | Douzaine | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | Mellin de St. Gelais. S'Amor vous a donné Douzaine | *1533–36* |
| Ye old mule that thinck yourself so fayre | 43 | Rondeau | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Suche happe as I ame happed in . | 44 | Octos. 6-line st. | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| They fie from me that sometyme did me seke | 46 | Troilus st. | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| There was never nothing more me payned | 47 | Quatrain and tail rime | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| Patience though I have not . . | 49 | 6-line st. | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | Serafino. Adapted | ,, |
| Paciens for my devise . . . | 50 | 6-line st. | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | Serafino. Adapted | ,, |
| Ye know my herte (last stanza) | 51 | | | | | | | | | | |
| Who hath herd of suche crueltye before | 52 | Ottava rima | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | Skelton. Idea to be traced in "Philip Sparrow" | ,, |
| If fansy would favor . . . . | 53 | Quatrain | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | | Early poem (?) |

## *TABLE OF FIRST LINES FROM THE EGERTON MS.*

| First Lines. | P. | Structure. | E. | D. | A. | P. | Harl. | Pr. | T. | Source. | Approx. dates. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Alas madam for stelyng of a kysse . | 55 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Serafino. In culpa donna. Strambotto (cf. Marot "en la baisant") | 1533–36 |
| What no perdy ye may be sure . | 56 | Rondeau octos. | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | 1526–27 |
| The wandering gadling in the sommer tyde | 57 | Ottava rima | √ | √ | — | √ | — | — | √ | Ariosto. O. F. Timida pastorella | 1533–36 |
| The lyvely sperkes that issue from those Iyes | 58 | Sonnet | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Vive faville usciam. Sonnet | |
| What nedeth these threning wordes and wasted wynde | 59 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Serafino. A che minacci : a che tanta ira. Strambotto | ,, |
| Ryght true it is and said full yore agoo | 59 | 7-line st. ababbbb | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| What wourde is that that chaungeth not | 60 | 7-line st. octos. | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| At moost myschief . . . . | 61 | 4-syll. st. | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Marvaill no more altho . . . | 63 | 6-syll. st. | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| Where shall I have at myn own will (l. 6. In debt to Chaucer, T. & C., iv. 258.) | 65 | Octos. quatrains | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| She sat and sowde that hath done me the wrong | 67 | Ottava rima | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | Skelton. Idea in "Philip Sparrow" | ,, |
| A Robyn . . . . . | 68 | Quatrains | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | Song derived from popular refrain | Early poem (?) |
| Suche vayne thought as wonted to myslede me | 69 | Sonnet | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Pieu d'un vago pensier. Sonnet | 1533–36 |
| Tho I cannot your crueltie constrain | 70 | 5-line st. | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| To wisshe and want and not obtain | 71 | Quatrains 8886 | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Some tyme I fled the fyre that me brent | 73 | Ottava rima | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | | 1532? |
| He is not ded that sometyme hath a fall | 73 | Ottava rima | √ | √ | — | √ | — | — | √ | Serafino. S'io son caduto. Strambotto | *1533–36* |
| The furyous gonne in his raging ire | 74 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Serafino. Si una bombardo. Strambotto | ,, |
| My hope Alas hath me abused . . | 75 | 7-line st. octos. | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| What deth is worse then this . . | 77 | 6-line st. 646446 | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Thenmy of liff decayer of allkynde | 78 | Ottava rima | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | Mellin de St. Gelais (adapted). Pres d'un cercueil | ,, |
| Ons as methought fortune me kyst . | 78 | Quatrains | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| My lute awake perfourm the last . | 80 | 5-line st. octos. | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| II chaunce assynd . . . . | 82 | 4-syll. line stanza | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |

## *TABLE OF FIRST LINES FROM THE EGERTON MS.*

| First Lines. | P. | Structure. | E. | D. | A. | P. | Harl. | Pr. | T. | Source. | Approx. dates. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| Nature that gave the bee so sete a grase | 83 | Ottava rima | √ | √ | — | — | √ | — | √ | | *1533–36* |
| I have sought long with stedfastnesse | 84 | Quatrains | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Lyke as the swanne towerds her deth | 89 | Quatrains | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | Serafino (adapted). Barzaletta ii, last strophe | ,, |
| In eternum I was ons determind . | 90 | monorhymed triplets and tail rhyme | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Syns ye delite to knowe . . . | 91 | st. 6644668 | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Hevyn and erth and all that here me playne | 92 | Quatrains | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | Petrarch (adapted). Sestina iii in Vita, and Sonnet xlviii in Morte | ,, |
| Comfort thy self my wofull hert . | 94 | Quatrains | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Myn owne John Poynz sins ye delight to know | 97 | Terza rima | √ | √ | √ | √ | — | — | √ | Luigi Alamanni To ndiro . . . . Tommaso mio gentil. Satire x | *1536* (June–September |
| Desire alas my master and my foo . | 99 | Ottava rima | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch (adapted). Sonnet xlvii in Vita ll. 5–8 "largui'l desio," M. Sève | |
| Venemus thorns that ar so sharp and kene | 99 | Ottava rima | √ | √ | — | √ | √ | — | √ | Serafino. Ogni pungente e venenosa. Strambotto | |
| My mothers maydes when they did sowe and spyn | 100 | Terza rima | √ | ll. 1–18 | — | — | — | — | √ | Horace. ii Satires 6 | |
| To cause accord or to aggre . . | 105 | monorhymed quatrains and refrain | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | |
| Though this port: and I thy servaunt true | 106 | Troilus st. | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | French refrain "en vogant la galère" | On the way to Spain, 1537 |
| Unstable dreme according to the place | 107 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Filosceno. Pareavi in questa nocte. Sonnet | ,, |
| Indowtful brest whilst moderly pitie | 108 | Ottava rima | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | Josephus. History of the Jews | *In Spain, 1537–39* |
| Off Cartage he that worthie warier | 108 | Ottava rima | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Vinsi Hanibal. Sonnet | ,, |
| Processe of tyme worketh suche wounder | 109 | Quatrains | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| After great storms the cawme retornis | 110 | Quatrains | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| A spending hand that alwaye powreth owte | 111 | Terza rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Horace. ii Satires 5; concluding lines Perseus Sat. iii. | Written to Brian, Ambassador in France, 1537 |

## *TABLE OF FIRST LINES FROM THE EGERTON MS.*

| First Lines. | P. | Structure. | E. | D. | A. | P. | Harl. | Pr. | T. | Source. | Approx. dates. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| All hevy myndes . . . . . | 113 | 4-line st. 4 6 6 4 | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | Petrarch adapted | (Written in Spain) |
| To seke eche where where man doeth lyve | 115 | 6-line st. 8 8 8 8 10 10 | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | Clement Marot. Etrenne. "Ce nouvel an" | |
| O goodely hand . . . . . | 116 | 6-line st. 4 4 6 4 4 6 | √ | — | — | — | √ | — | — | Petrarch (adapted). O bella mane. Cf. also Giusti di Conti "La Bella Mane" | ,, |
| Lo what it is to love . . . | 117 | stanza 6 6 4 4 6 4 6 | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | | |
| Leve thus to slaunder love . | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Who most doeth slaunder love . | 118 | ,, ,, | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | | |
| I lede a liff unpleasaunt nothing | 120 | ,, ,, | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| glad | 121 | Ottava rima | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| | | | | | | | | | | | ,, |
| Yf in the world ther be more woo . | 122 | Treizaine | √ | √ | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Thanswere that ye made to me my dere | 123 | 5-line st. | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| Most wretched hart most myserable | 124 | Quatrains | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | Chaucer. Playnte to Fortune | ,, |
| You that in love finde luck and h'abundance | 126 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | | ,, |
| And if an Iye may save or sleye . | 127 | 7-line st. octos. | √ | — | — | — | — | — | — | | ,, |
| Altho thow se thowtragius clime aloft | 128 | Terza rima | ll. 1-86 | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Paraphrase to Psalm xxxvii. | ,, |
| From thes hye hilles as when a spryng doth fall | 129 | Ottava rima | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | Ariosto. Forza è al fin. Capitoli Amorosi | ,, |
| If waker care if sodayne pale Colour | 130 | Sonnet | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. First six lines of S'una fede amorosa. Sonnet | ,, |
| So feble is the threde that doeth the burden stay | 131 | Poulter's measure | √ | √ | √ | — | — | — | √ | Petrarch. Si e debile il filo a cui s'attene. Canzone | ,, |
| Tagus fare well that westward with thy strems | 135 | Ottava rima | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | Boethius. Metrum 10. For first two lines (Tagus . . . tryde) | |
| Off purpos love chase first for to be blynd | 135 | Ottava rima | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | | In England 1539 (?) |
| What rage is this? What furour of what kynd? | 136 | 4-line st. 10 10 10 6 | √ | — | — | — | — | — | √ | Cf. | |
| Vulcane bygat me Mynerva me taught | 137 | Ottava rima | √ | — | — | — | √ | — | √ | Pandulpho. Entered late (by Harrington) | |

## TABLE OF FIRST LINES FROM THE EGERTON MS.

| First Lines. | P. | Structure. | E. | D. | A. | P. | Harl. | Pr. | T. | Source. | Approx. dates. |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| The great Macedon that out of Perse chasyd | | Sonnet by H. Surrey | | | | | | | | | |
| *Psalms.* | | | | | | | | | | | |
| Introd. Love to gyve law unto his subject hertes | 169 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Standosi Amore a dar legge a le persone. Introd. | July 1540–Jan. 1541 |
| Ps. v. O Lord sins in my mowth thy myghty name | 172 | Terza rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Signore poi che il tuo nome. Ps. v. | ,, |
| Introd. Who so hath sene the sikk in his fevour | 176 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Chi mai ha visto uno infermo. Introd. | ,, |
| Ps. xxxii. Oh happy ar they that have forgiffness gott | 177 | Terza rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. O beati coloro le cui iniquita. Ps. xxxii. | ,, |
| Introd. This song endid David did stint his voyce | 180 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Tacquesi David tosto ch'egli. Introd. | ,, |
| Ps. xxxviii. O Lord as I the have both prayd and pray | 181 | Terza rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Deh signore si come io ho pregato. Ps. xxxviii. | ,, |
| Introd. Like as the pilgryme that in a long way | 184 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Parve un peregrino. Introd. | ,, |
| Ps. li. Rew on me Lord for thy goodnes and grace | 185 | Terza rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Habbi misericordia di me Iddio. Ps. li. | ,, |
| Introd. Off diepe secretes that David here did syng | 188 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Poscia che David hebbe. Introd. | ,, |
| Ps. cii. Lord here my prayer and let my crye passe | 189 | Terza rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Esandisci Signore la mia oratione. Ps. cii. | ,, |
| Introd. When David had perceyvid in his brest | 192 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Cantato ei hebbe David. Introd. | ,, |
| Ps. cxxx. Ffrom depth of sin and from a diepe dispaire | 193 | Terza rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Dai profundi io ho esclamato. Ps. cxxx. | ,, |
| Introd. This word redeme y^t in his mowth did sownd | 194 | Ottava rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Introd. | ,, |
| Ps. cxliii. Here my prayer O Lord here my request | 195 | Terza rima | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Pietro Aretino. Signore esandisci la mia oratione. Ps. cxliii. | ,, |
| When Dido festid first (unfinished) . | 200 | Poulter's measure | √ | — | √ | — | — | — | — | Based on Thomas Linacre's commentary in Greek and Latin of Ptolemy's Sphere, 1536, and a popular edition of the "Compost," in English," 1536 | April 1541–1542 |

# ALPHABETICAL INDEX OF FIRST LINES

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES

# INDEX OF FIRST LINES




Printed for the University of London Press, Ltd., by
Richard Clay & Sons, Ltd., London and Bungay.